# Generalized (co)homology of the loop spaces of classical groups and the universal factorial Schur 

 $P$ - and $Q$-functionsMasaki Nakagawa and Hiroshi Naruse


#### Abstract

. In this paper, we study the generalized (co)homology Hopf algebras of the loop spaces on the infinite classical groups, generalizing the work due to Kono-Kozima and Clarke. We shall give a description of these Hopf algebras in terms of symmetric functions. Based on topological considerations in the first half of this paper, we then introduce a universal analogue of the factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions due to Ivanov and Ikeda-Naruse. We investigate various properties of these functions such as the cancellation property, which we call the $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric property, the factorization property, and the vanishing property. We prove that the universal analogue of the Schur $P$-functions form a formal basis for the ring of symmetric functions with the $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric property. By using the universal analogue of the Cauchy identity, we then define the dual universal Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions. We describe the duality of these functions in terms of Hopf algebras.


## Contents

1. Introduction ..... 338
2. E-(co)homology of $\Omega S p$ and $\Omega_{0} S O$ ..... 344
3. Rings of $E$-(co)homology Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions ..... 362
4. Universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions ..... 371

Received October 20, 2013.
Revised May 6, 2014.
2010 Mathematics Subject Classification. 05E05, 55N20, 57 T 25.
Key words and phrases. Loop spaces, Hopf algebras, Schur $P$ - and $Q$ functions, Generalized (co)homology theory, Lazard ring.

The first author is partially supported by the Grant-in-Aid for Scientific Research (C) 24540105, Japan Society for the Promotion of Science.

The second author is partially supported by the Grant-in-Aid for Scientific Research (C) 25400041, Japan Society for the Promotion of Science.
5. Dual universal (factorial) Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions 395
6. Appendix

## §1. Introduction

Let $S U=S U(\infty), S p=S p(\infty)$, and $S O=S O(\infty)$ be the infinite special unitary, symplectic, and special orthogonal group respectively, and $\Omega S U, \Omega S p$, and $\Omega_{0} S O$ denote its based loop space ( $\Omega_{0}$ means the connected component of the identity). These spaces have natural (homotopy-commutative) H-space structure given by the usual loop multiplication. On the other hand, it is well-known that these loop spaces have no torsion and no odd degree elements in (co)homology with integer coefficients (see e.g., the classical work due to Bott [4], [5]). Therefore the H-space structure on $\Omega S U$ (resp. $\Omega S p, \Omega_{0} S O$ ) endows $H_{*}(\Omega S U)$ and $H^{*}(\Omega S U)$ (resp. $H_{*}(\Omega S p)$ and $H^{*}(\Omega S p), H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ and $\left.H^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)\right)$ with the structure of dual Hopf algebras over the integers $\mathbb{Z}$. These Hopf algebras were intensively studied by Bott [6]. Although Bott uses the technique of symmetric functions very much in that paper (see e.g., $[6, \S 8]$ ), he did not give explicitly the descriptions of these Hopf algebras in terms of symmetric functions. On the other hand, by means of the celebrated Bott periodicity theorem (Bott [7], [6, Proposition 8.3], Switzer [62, 11.60, 16.47]), there exists a homotopy equivalence of H -spaces $B U \simeq \Omega S U$, where $B U$ denotes the classifying space of the infinite unitary group $U=U(\infty)$. The H-space structure of $B U$ is induced from the Whitney sum of complex vector bundles (see e.g., May [47, p.201, Proposition], Switzer [62, p.213]). Therefore they have the isomorphic (co)homology. By the theory of characteristic classes of complex vector bundles, it is well known that the integral cohomology ring of $B U$ is $H^{*}(B U) \cong \mathbb{Z}\left[c_{1}, c_{2}, \ldots\right]$, where $c_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ denote the universal Chern classes. The homology ring of $B U$ is also known to be a polynomial ring of the form $H_{*}(B U) \cong \mathbb{Z}\left[\beta_{1}, \beta_{2}, \ldots\right]$, where $\beta_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ is an element of degree $2 i$ induced from the natural map $B U(1) \simeq \mathbb{C} P^{\infty} \longrightarrow B U$ (see e.g., Switzer [62, Corollary 16.11, Theorem 16.17]). Moreover, $H^{*}(B U)$ is a Hopf algebra which is self-dual: $H_{*}(B U)$ is isomorphic to $H^{*}(B U)$ as a Hopf algebra. In topology, it is customary to think of Chern classes of complex vector bundles as elementary symmetric functions in certain variables (sometimes called the Chern roots). From this, both $H^{*}(B U) \cong H^{*}(\Omega S U)$ and $H_{*}(B U) \cong H_{*}(\Omega S U)$ can be identified with the ring of symmetric functions denoted by $\Lambda$. For cohomology, the universal Chern classes
$c_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ correspond to the $i$-th elementary symmetric functions $e_{i}$, and for homology, the elements $\beta_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ correspond to the $i$-th complete symmetric functions $h_{i}$ (for this point of view, see e.g., Baker-Richter [3, §5], Lenart [44, §4], Liulevicius [45]). The starting point of our work is to give descriptions of other Hopf algebras $H^{*}(\Omega S p)$, $H_{*}(\Omega S p), H^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$, and $H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ in terms of symmetric functions. By the Bott periodicity theorem again, there exist homotopy equivalences of H-spaces $S p / U \simeq \Omega S p, S O / U \simeq \Omega_{0} S O$ (see e.g., Switzer [62, p.409]). Especially we have the isomorphisms $H^{*}(\Omega S p) \cong H^{*}(S p / U)$ and $H^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong H^{*}(S O / U)$. On the other hand, by the work of Pragacz [55, §6] and Józefiak [28], we know that the integral cohomology ring $H^{*}(S p / U)$ (resp. $\left.H^{*}(S O / U)\right)$ of the infinite Lagrangian Grassmannian $S p / U$ (resp. infinite orthogonal Grassmannian $S O / U$ ) is isomorphic to the ring of Schur $Q$-functions (resp. Schur $P$-functions) denoted by $\Gamma$ (resp. $\Gamma^{\prime}$ ). Therefore we have the following isomorphism abstractly: $H^{*}(\Omega S p) \cong \Gamma$ and $H^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong \Gamma^{\prime}$. Since $\Gamma$ and $\Gamma^{\prime}$ are mutually dual Hopf algebras over $\mathbb{Z}$, we also have $H_{*}(\Omega S p) \cong \Gamma^{\prime}$ and $H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong \Gamma$.

Recently, the study of the affine Grassmannian $\mathrm{Gr}_{G}$ for a simplyconnected simple complex algebraic group $G$ in terms of Schubert calculus has been developed extensively (see e.g., Peterson [56], Lam [36], Lam-Schilling-Shimozono [39], [40]). On the one hand, $\mathrm{Gr}_{G}$ admits a cell decomposition by Schubert cells from its presentation $\mathrm{Gr}_{G}=$ $G(\mathbb{C}((t))) / G(\mathbb{C}[[t]])$ (see e.g., Garland-Raghunathan [19, Theorem 1.9], Mitchell [50, Theorem 1.3], [51, Theorem 1.2], [52, Corollary 3.2]). From this, $H_{*}\left(\mathrm{Gr}_{G}\right)$ and $H^{*}\left(\mathrm{Gr}_{G}\right)$ have free $\mathbb{Z}$-module bases consisting of Schubert classes. On the other hand, by the result of GarlandRaghunathan [19, Corollary 1.7] and an unpublished work of Quillen (see also Mitchell [51, Theorems 1.1 and 1.4]), [52, Theorem 4.2]), it is known that $\mathrm{Gr}_{G}$ is homotopy equivalent to the based loop space $\Omega K$ on the maximal compact subgroup $K$ of $G$. Therefore their work is closely related to our current work. In particular, Lam studied the affine Grassmannian $\operatorname{Gr}_{S L(n, \mathbb{C})} \simeq \Omega S U(n)$, and identified $H_{*}\left(\operatorname{Gr}_{S L(n, \mathbb{C})}\right)$ and $H^{*}\left(\operatorname{Gr}_{S L(n, \mathbb{C})}\right)$ with a subring $\Lambda_{(n)}$ and a quotient $\Lambda^{(n)}$ of the ring of symmetric functions $\Lambda$. Moreover he identified the Schubert classes of $H_{*}\left(\mathrm{Gr}_{S L(n, \mathbb{C})}\right)$ and $H^{*}\left(\operatorname{Gr}_{S L(n, \mathbb{C})}\right)$ as explicit symmetric functions (see [36, Theorem 7.1]). Also Lam-Schilling-Shimozono [39] considered the affine Grassmannian $\operatorname{Gr}_{S p_{2 n}(\mathbb{C})} \simeq \Omega S p(n)$ and identified $H_{*}\left(\operatorname{Gr}_{S p_{2 n}(\mathbb{C})}\right)$ and $H^{*}\left(\mathrm{Gr}_{S p_{2 n}(\mathbb{C})}\right)$ with certain dual Hopf algebras $\Gamma_{(n)}$ and $\Gamma^{(n)}$ of symmetric functions, defined in terms of Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions. By taking limit $n \rightarrow \infty$, we obtain immediately the above descriptions of
$H_{*}(\Omega S p)$ and $H^{*}(\Omega S p)$. However, these deep results depend on Peterson's remarkable result ([56]): In his lecture notes, he constructed an isomorphism between the torus equivariant homology $H_{*}^{T}\left(\mathrm{Gr}_{G}\right)$ of the affine Grassmannian and a certain subalgebra of the affine nilHecke ring $\mathbb{A}_{\text {aff }}$. Thus it seems difficult to find a geometric or topological meaning of their result.

We then turned our attention to topologists' work on the loop spaces on Lie groups (e.g., Clarke [14], [15], [16], Kono-Kozima [31], Kozima [33], [34], [35]). Especially we focused on Kono-Kozima's work. In [31], they considered the following homomorphisms in homology:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega(c \circ q)_{*}=(\Omega c)_{*} \circ(\Omega q)_{*}: H_{*}(\Omega S U) \xrightarrow{(\Omega q)_{*}} H_{*}(\Omega S p) \xrightarrow{(\Omega c)_{*}} H_{*}(\Omega S U), \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $q: S U \longrightarrow S p$ and $c: S p \longrightarrow S U$ are induced from the quaternionification $S U(n) \longleftrightarrow S p(n)$ and the complex restriction $S p(n) \longleftrightarrow$ $S U(2 n)$ (see (4) in this paper). It is easy to show that $(\Omega c)_{*}$ is a split monomorphism (Lemma 2.3) and thus $H_{*}(\Omega S p)$ can be regarded as a subalgebra of $H_{*}(\Omega S U)$. By a topological argument, they fixed elements $z_{i} \in H_{2 i}(\Omega S p)(i=1,2, \ldots)$, and determined the Hopf algebra structure of $H_{*}(\Omega S p)$ explicitly in terms of these elements ([31, Theorem $2.18])^{1}$. In course of consideration, they showed the following formula ([31, Theorem 2.9]):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega(c \circ q)_{*}(\beta(x))=\beta(x) / \beta(-x), \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we used the isomorphism $H_{*}(\Omega S U) \cong H_{*}(B U) \cong \mathbb{Z}\left[\beta_{1}, \beta_{2}, \ldots\right]$ as mentioned before, and $\beta(x):=\sum_{i \geq 0} \beta_{i} x^{i} \in H_{*}(\Omega S U)[[x]]$, a formal power series. This formula is of particular importance in our present work: From (2), we see immediately that under the afore-mentioned isomorphism $H_{*}(B U) \cong H_{*}(\Omega S U) \cong \Lambda$, the monomorphism $(\Omega c)_{*}$ : $H_{*}(\Omega S p) \longleftrightarrow H_{*}(\Omega S U)$ can be identified with the natural inclusion $\Gamma^{\prime} \longleftrightarrow \Lambda$ (the similar consideration can be found in Lam [37, §2.3]). In this way, we are able to give a sequence of homomorphisms (1) an interpretation in terms of symmetric functions (for more details, see $\S 3.4)$. The advantage of our method is that it has immediate application to any generalized homology theory $E_{*}(-)$ which is complex oriented in the sense of Adams [1, p.37] (for the application to the $K$-homology theory, see Clarke [15]).

[^0]Let $E^{*}(-)$ denote a complex oriented generalized (multiplicative) cohomology theory, and $E_{*}(-)$ the corresponding homology theory in the sense of Adams [1, p.37]. The coefficient rings for these two theories are given by $E_{*}:=E_{*}(\mathrm{pt})$ ( $E$-homology of a point) and $E^{*}:=$ $E^{*}(\mathrm{pt})$ ( $E$-cohomology of a point). Our first aim is to describe the $E_{*^{-}}$ (co)homology of $\Omega S U, \Omega S p$, and $\Omega_{0} S O$ in terms of symmetric functions. Generalizing the approach due to Kono-Kozima [31] and Clarke [15], we are able to describe the Hopf algebras $E_{*}(\Omega S p)$ and $E^{*}(\Omega S p)$ (resp. $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ and $\left.E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)\right)$ as subalgebras of $E_{*}(\Omega S U)$ and $E^{*}(\Omega S U)$ (see Section 2). Motivated by the description of $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ and $E_{*}(\Omega S p)$ (resp. $E^{*}(\Omega S p)$ and $E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ ), in Section 3, we shall introduce certain subalgebras $\Gamma_{*}^{E}, \Gamma_{*}^{\prime E}$ of $\Lambda_{*}^{E}$ (resp. $\Gamma_{E}^{*}, \Gamma_{E}^{\prime *}$ of $\Lambda_{E}^{*}$ ). By definition, using the identification $E_{*}(\Omega S U) \cong E_{*}(B U)$ with $\Lambda_{*}^{E}:=E_{*} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \Lambda$ (scalar extension) (resp. $E^{*}(\Omega S U) \cong E^{*}(B U)$ with $\Lambda_{E}^{*}:=\operatorname{Hom}_{E_{*}}\left(\Lambda_{*}^{E}, E_{*}\right)$ (graded dual) , one sees immediately that $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong \Gamma_{*}^{E}$ and $E_{*}(\Omega S p) \cong \Gamma^{\prime}{ }_{*}^{E}$ (resp. $E^{*}(\Omega S p) \cong \Gamma_{E}^{*}$ and $\left.E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong \Gamma_{E}^{\prime *}\right)$. Thus our first main result identifies $E_{*}(\Omega S p)$ and $E^{*}(\Omega S p)$ (resp. $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ and $\left.E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)\right)$ with certain dual Hopf algebras $\Gamma_{*}^{\prime E}$ and $\Gamma_{E}^{*}\left(\right.$ resp. $\Gamma_{*}^{E}$ and $\left.\Gamma_{E}^{\prime *}\right)$ of symmetric functions, defined in terms of a generalization of the rings of Schur $P$ and $Q$-functions (Propositions 3.11, 3.12).

Having constructed certain Hopf algebras $\Gamma_{*}^{E}, \Gamma_{*}^{\prime}$ of $\Lambda_{*}^{E}$ and $\Gamma_{E}^{*}$, $\Gamma_{E}^{\prime *}$ of $\Lambda_{E}^{*}$ of symmetric functions as above, our next task is to construct certain symmetric functions which may serve as "nice bases" for these algebras as free $E_{*}$ (or $\left.E^{*}\right)$-modules. Since the complex cobordism theory $M U^{*}(-)$ is "universal" among complex oriented generalized cohomology theories (Quillen [57]), it suffices to consider the case $E=M U$. In this case, the coefficient ring $M U_{*}=M U^{-*}$ is known to be isomorphic to the Lazard ring $\mathbb{L}$ (Lazard [42], Quillen [57, Theorem 2], Adams [1, Part II, Theorem 8.2]) ${ }^{2}$. We wish to construct certain symmetric functions which constitute bases for $\Gamma^{\prime *}{ }_{M U}, \Gamma_{M U}^{*}$, and their dual bases for $\Gamma_{*}^{M U}$, $\Gamma_{*}^{\prime M U}$. We also expect them to correspond to cohomology Schubert bases for $M U^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong M U^{*}(S O / U), M U^{*}(\Omega S p) \cong M U^{*}(S p / U)$, and homology Schubert bases for $M U_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong M U_{*}(S O / U), M U_{*}(\Omega S p) \cong$ $M U_{*}(S p / U)$ respectively. In Sections 4 and 5, we tackle this problem along the following lines: Firstly, at the time of this writing, it is not

[^1]known how to define or characterize geometrically the Schubert classes of general flag varieties $G / P$ or affine Grassmannians $\mathrm{Gr}_{G}$ in generalized (co)homology theories $E^{*}(-)$ and $E_{*}(-)$ (for the Schubert classes in generalized (co)homology theories, see e.g., Ganter-Ram [18]). Thus we switch our attention from geometry to algebra, and deal with the above problem purely algebraically. Secondly, it seems plausible to define the Schubert classes by way of the torus equivariant cohomology theory and the technique of the localization theory (see Ganter-Ram [18], Harada-Henriques-Holm [20], Ikeda-Naruse [25], Kostant-Kumar [32]). In torus equivariant theory, various factorial analogues of Schur functions play an important role (for the factorial Schur functions and the complex Grassmannians, see Knutson-Tao [30], Molev-Sagan [54]; for the factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions and the maximal isotropic Grassmannians, see Ivanov [27], Ikeda [22], Ikeda-Naruse [23]; for the $K$-theoretic analogues of factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions, see Ikeda-Naruse [25]). Thus we wish to construct the required functions as a natural generalization of these factorial Schur functions. This suggests that our functions will contain multi-parameter $\mathbf{b}=\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots\right)$. The definition of our functions in cohomology, denoted $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ with $\lambda$ a strict partition, $\mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\right)$ independent variables, $\mathbf{b}=\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots\right)$ parameters, will be given in $\S 4.2$, Definition 4.1. We shall call them the universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions. As the name suggests, if we specialize $a_{i, j}=0$ for all $i, j \geq 1$, we will obtain the usual factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions $P_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ and $Q_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ due to Ivanov [27] ${ }^{3}$, and if we specialize $a_{1,1}=\beta$, "Bott's element", and $a_{i, j}=0$ for all $(i, j) \neq(1,1)$, we will obtain the $K$-theoretic analogue of the factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions $G P_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ and $G Q_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ due to Ikeda-Naruse [25]. Further we shall investigate various properties of our functions such as

[^2]- the $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric property which is a generalization of the " $Q$-cancellation property" due to Pragacz [55, p.145], "supersymmetricity" due to Ivanov [27, Definition 2.1], and " $K$ supersymmetric property ( $K$-theoretic $Q$-cancellation property)" due to Ikeda-Naruse [25, Definition 1.1];
- the factorization property (cf. Pragacz [55, Proposition 2.2] and Ikeda-Naruse [25, Proposition 2.3]);
- the vanishing property (cf. Ivanov [27, Theorem 5.3], IkedaNaruse [23, Proposition 8.3], Ikeda-Mihalcea-Naruse [24, Proposition 4.2], Ikeda-Naruse [25, Proposition 7.1]);
- the basis theorem (cf. Ikeda-Mihalcea-Naruse [24, Proposition 4.2], Ikeda-Naruse [25, Theorem 3.1, Propositions 3.2, 3.4, 3.5]).

In particular, in the non-equivariant case, i.e., $\mathbf{b}=0$, our functions $\left\{P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right\}$ (resp. $\left.\left\{Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right\}\right)$ turn out to constitute a formal $\mathbb{L}$-basis for the ring $\Gamma_{M U}^{\prime *} \cong M U^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ (resp. $\Gamma_{M U}^{*} \cong M U^{*}(\Omega S p)$ ). Combining these "cohomology bases" $\left\{P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right\}$ and $\left\{Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right\}$ with the argument using an analogue of the Cauchy identity, we shall define the dual bases. More precisely, we define functions $\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ with $\lambda$ a strict partition, $\mathbf{y}=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots\right)$ one more set of independent variables, by the following identity (Definition 5.3):

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Delta(\mathbf{x} ; \mathbf{y})=\prod_{i, j \geq 1} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}=\sum_{\lambda: \text { strict }} Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \\
& \Delta(\mathbf{x} ; \mathbf{y})=\prod_{i, j \geq 1} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}=\sum_{\lambda: \text { strict }} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \hat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We also show the basis theorem for these dual functions, and furthermore we will discuss the duality of these functions in terms of the theory of Hopf algebras. Thus our second main result is the algebraic construction of the universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ 's, $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ 's and their duals $\hat{q}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ 's, $\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ 's (with $\mathbf{b}=0$ ). At present, the geometric meaning of our functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}), Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ and $\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ is not apparent. However, for instance, the vanishing property of $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ 's strongly suggests that these functions will provide the "Schubert basis" for the torus equivariant complex cobordism $M U_{T}^{*}(L G(n))$ for a Lagrangian Grassmannian $L G(n) \cong S p(n) / U(n), T$ a maximal torus of $S p(n)$. We shall discuss this problem elsewhere.

This paper is organized as follows: In Section 2, we review the topologists' work concerning the loop spaces on $S U, S p$, and $S O$. Especially, we shall give descriptions of $E$-(co)homology Hopf algebras of
$\Omega S p$ and $\Omega_{0} S O$, where $E^{*}(-)$ denotes a complex oriented generalized cohomology theory (see Theorems 2.8, 2.13, and 2.18). In Section 3, we introduce the $E$-theoretic analogues of the rings of Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions (see Subsections 3.2, 3.3), and give an interpretation of $E$ (co)homology Hopf algebras of $\Omega S p$ and $\Omega_{0} S O$ in terms of symmetric functions (see Propositions 3.11, 3.12). These are the first main result of this paper. In Section 4, we define the universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ (Definition 4.1), and establish the fundamental properties of these functions such as $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetricity (Subsection 4.3), stability property (Subsection 4.4), factorization formula (Subsection 4.6), vanishing property (Subsection 4.8), and basis theorem (Subsections 4.7, 4.10). In this section, we also define the universal factorial Schur functions $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ and discuss their properties (Subsection 4.5). In Section 5, we define the dual universal Schur $P$ and $Q$-functions $\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\hat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$, and establish the basis theorem (Theorem 5.6). Moreover, we describe the duality of these functions. Then our second main result is summarized in Theorem 5.8. In the Appendix, Section 6, we discuss another version of the universal factorial Schur functions $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)$, which are the universal analogues of Molev's double Schur functions [53] (Subsection 6.1). We also collect the necessary data concerning the Weyl groups, the root systems, etc. of classical types.

Acknowledgments. We would like to thank Takeshi Ikeda, Nobuaki Yagita for helpful comments and valuable conversations.

## $\S$ 2. $E$-(co)homology of $\Omega S p$ and $\Omega_{0} S O$

### 2.1. Generalized (co)homology theory

As in the introduction, $E^{*}(-)$ denotes a complex oriented generalized (multiplicative) cohomology theory, and $E_{*}(-)$ the corresponding homology theory in the sense of Adams [1, Part II, p.37], Switzer [62, 16.27]. A generator $x^{E} \in \tilde{E}^{2}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right)$, where $\tilde{E}^{*}(-)$ is the corresponding reduced cohomology theory, is specified and it is called the orientation class. The coefficient rings for these two theories are given by $E_{*}=E_{*}(\mathrm{pt})$ and $E^{*}=E_{-*}$. In what follows, the coefficient ring $E_{*}$ is assumed to be torsion free. Then it is known that the cohomology ring of the infinite projective space $\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}$ is $E^{*}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right)=E^{*}\left[\left[x^{E}\right]\right]$, a formal power series ring with the given generator $x^{E} \in \tilde{E}^{2}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right)$ (see Adams [1, Part II, Lemma 2.5]), and the homology $E_{*}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right)$ of $\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}$ is a free $E_{*}$-module with a basis $\left\{\beta_{i}^{E}\right\}_{i \geq 0}\left(\beta_{0}^{E}=1\right)$ (Adams [1, Part II, Lemma 2.14]). With respect to the $E$-theory Kronecker product (pairing), we
have

$$
\left\langle\left(x^{E}\right)^{i}, \beta_{j}^{E}\right\rangle=\delta_{i j},
$$

namely, $\left\{\left(x^{E}\right)^{i}\right\}_{i \geq 0}$ and $\left\{\beta_{j}^{E}\right\}_{j \geq 0}$ are dual bases over $E_{*}$.
Let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mu_{E}(u, v)=u+v+\sum_{i, j \geq 1} a_{i, j}^{E} u^{i} v^{j} \in E^{*}[[u, v]] \\
&\left(a_{i, j}^{E}=a_{i, j} \in E^{2(1-i-j)}=E_{2(i+j-1)}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

be the (one dimensional commutative) formal group law over the graded ring $E^{*}$ associated with the cohomology theory $E^{*}(-)$. The formal power series $\mu_{E}(u, v)$ satisfies the conditions
(i) $\mu_{E}(u, 0)=u, \mu_{E}(0, v)=v$,
(ii) $\mu_{E}(u, v)=\mu_{E}(v, u)$,
(iii) $\mu_{E}\left(u, \mu_{E}(v, w)\right)=\mu_{E}\left(\mu_{E}(u, v), w\right)$.

It follows from (i), (ii) that

$$
a_{i, 0}=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
1 & (i=1), \\
0 & (i \geq 2)
\end{array} \quad \text { and } \quad a_{0, j}= \begin{cases}1 & (j=1) \\
0 & (j \geq 2)\end{cases}\right.
$$

and $a_{i, j}=a_{j, i}(i, j \geq 1)$. Therefore $\mu_{E}(u, v)$ is in fact of the form

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mu_{E}(u, v) & =u+v+\sum_{i, j \geq 1} a_{i, j} u^{i} v^{j} \\
& =u+v+a_{1,1} u v+a_{1,2} u^{2} v+a_{1,2} u v^{2}+\cdots .
\end{aligned}
$$

We shall use this formal group law to define the formal sum, formal inverse, and formal subtraction. Namely, for two indeterminates $X, Y$, the formal sum $X+{ }_{\mu} Y$ is defined as

$$
X+{ }_{\mu} Y:=\mu_{E}(X, Y)=X+Y+\sum_{i, j \geq 1} a_{i, j} X^{i} Y^{j} \in E^{*}[[X, Y]]
$$

Denote by

$$
[-1]_{E}(X)=\iota_{E}(X)=\bar{X}=\sum_{j \geq 1} c_{j} X^{j} \in E^{*}[[X]]
$$

the formal inverse series ${ }^{4}$. Namely $[-1]_{E}(X)$ is the unique formal power series satisfying the condition $\mu_{E}\left(X,[-1]_{E}(X)\right) \equiv 0$, or equivalently

[^3]$X+{ }_{\mu}[-1]_{E}(X)=0$. It follows directly from the definition that we have (3)
\[

$$
\begin{aligned}
{[-1]_{E}(X) } & =-X+a_{1,1} X^{2}-a_{1,1}^{2} X^{3}+\left(a_{1,1}^{3}+a_{1,1} a_{1,2}+2 a_{1,3}-a_{2,2}\right) X^{4} \\
& +\left(-a_{1,1}^{4}-3 a_{1,1}^{2} a_{1,2}-6 a_{1,1} a_{1,3}+3 a_{1,1} a_{2,2}\right) X^{5}+\cdots .
\end{aligned}
$$
\]

This formal inverse allows us to define the formal subtraction:

$$
X-{ }_{\mu} Y:=X+{ }_{\mu}[-1]_{E}(Y)=X+{ }_{\mu} \bar{Y} .
$$

Finally, we define $[1]_{E}(X):=X$, and inductively,

$$
[n]_{E}(X):=[n-1]_{E}(X)+{ }_{\mu} X=\mu_{E}\left([n-1]_{E}(X), X\right) \quad(n \geq 2),
$$

and $[-n]_{E}(X):=[n]_{E}\left([-1]_{E}(X)\right)=[-1]_{E}\left([n]_{E}(X)\right)(n \geq 1)$. We call $[n]_{E}(X)$ the $n$-series in the following. In later sections, we often need the 2-series $[2]_{E}(X)=X+{ }_{\mu} X=\mu_{E}(X, X)$. If we put $[2]_{E}(X)=\sum_{k \geq 1} \alpha_{k}^{E} X^{k}$, then
$\alpha_{1}^{E}=2, \alpha_{2}^{E}=a_{1,1}, \alpha_{3}^{E}=2 a_{1,2}, \alpha_{4}^{E}=2 a_{1,3}+a_{2,2}, \alpha_{5}^{E}=2 a_{1,4}+2 a_{2,3}, \ldots$.

## Example 2.1.

(1) For the ordinary cohomology theory (with integer coefficients) $E=H$, the coefficient ring is $H^{*}=H^{*}(\mathrm{pt})=\mathbb{Z}\left(H^{0}=\mathbb{Z}\right.$, $\left.H^{k}=0(k \neq 0)\right)$. We choose the standard orientation, namely the class of a hyperplane $x^{H} \in \tilde{H}^{2}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right)$. Then the associated formal group law is the additive formal group law $\mu_{H}(X, Y)=$ $X+Y$. The 2-series is $[2]_{H}(X)=2 X$, and the formal inverse is $[-1]_{H}(X)=-X$.
(2) For the (topological) $K$-theory $E=K$, the coefficient ring is $K^{*}=K^{*}(\mathrm{pt})=\mathbb{Z}\left[\beta, \beta^{-1}\right]$, with $\beta:=1-\eta_{1}^{*} \in K^{-2}(\mathrm{pt}) \cong$ $\tilde{K}\left(S^{2}\right)$, where $\eta_{1}$ stands for the tautological (or Hopf) line bunlde over $\mathbb{C} P^{1} \cong S^{2}$ and $\eta_{1}^{*}$ its dual. We choose the standard orientation $x^{K}:=\beta^{-1}\left(1-\eta_{\infty}^{*}\right) \in \tilde{K}^{2}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right)$, where $\eta_{\infty}$ stands for the tautological line bundle over $\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}{ }^{5}$. Then the associated formal group law is the multiplicative formal group

[^4]law $\mu_{K}(X, Y)=X+Y-\beta X Y$. The 2-series is $[2]_{K}(X)=$ $2 X-\beta X^{2}$, and the formal inverse is
$$
[-1]_{K}(X)=-\frac{X}{1-\beta X}=-X-\beta X^{2}-\beta^{2} X^{3}-\beta^{3} X^{4}-\cdots
$$
(3) For the complex cobordism theory $E=M U$, the coefficient ring $M U^{*}=M U^{*}(\mathrm{pt})$ is a polynomial algebra over $\mathbb{Z}$ on generators of degrees $-2,-4, \ldots$ (see e.g., Adams $[1$, Part II, Theorem 8.1]). As in Adams [1, Part II, Examples (2.4)], Ravenel [58, Example 4.1.3], we take the orientation class $x^{M U} \in \tilde{M} U^{2}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right)$ to be the (stable) homotopy class of the map $\mathbb{C} P^{\infty} \simeq B U(1) \xrightarrow{\sim}$ $M U(1)$, where $M U(1)$ denotes the Thom space of the universal line bundle over $B U(1)$. Then the associated formal group law
$\mu_{M U}(X, Y)=X+Y+\sum_{i, j \geq 1} a_{i, j}^{M U} X^{i} Y^{j}, \quad a_{i, j}^{M U} \in M U^{2(1-i-j)}$
is a universal formal group law first shown by Quillen [57, Theorem 2]. Namely, for any formal group law $\mu$ over a commutative ring $R$ with unit, there exists a unique ring homomorphism $\theta: M U^{*} \longrightarrow R$ such that $\mu(X, Y)=\left(\theta_{*} \mu_{M U}\right)(X, Y):=$ $X+Y+\sum_{i, j \geq 1} \theta\left(a_{i, j}^{M U}\right) X^{i} Y^{j}$. Quillen also showed that the coefficient ring $M U^{*}$ is isomorphic to the Lazard ring $\mathbb{L}$ (see also Section 4).

## 2.2. $\quad E$-(co)homology of the loop space of $S U$

Let $S U=S U(\infty)$ be the infinite special unitary group, and $\Omega S U$ its based loop space. By the celebrated Bott periodicity theorem (see Bott [6, Proposition 8.3], [7, p.314, Theorem II], Switzer [62, 16.47]), there exists a homotopy equivalence $g_{\infty}: B U \xrightarrow{\sim} \Omega S U$ (for the precise construction of the map $g_{\infty}$, see Bott [ 6 , Propositions 8.2, 8.3], Switzer [62, 16.47], Kono-Kozima [31, §1]). Therefore they have isomorphic (co)homology for any (co)homology theory. Moreover, both spaces $\Omega S U$ and $B U$ are equipped with H -space structures defined by the loop multiplication and the Whitney sum map respectively, and the above homotopy equivalence is actually an equivalence as H -spaces. Since the integral homology of $B U$ has no torsion, the (co)homology of these spaces are isomorphic as Hopf algebras for any (complex oriented) generalized cohomology theory $E^{*}(-)$. The following facts are well known to topologists (see e.g., Adams [1, Part II, Lemma 4.1, Lemma 4.3], Switzer [62, Theorems 16.31, 16.32]).

## Theorem 2.2.

(1) The E-cohomology ring of $B U$ is given as follows:

$$
E^{*}(B U) \cong E^{*}\left[\left[c_{1}^{E}, c_{2}^{E}, \ldots, c_{n}^{E}, \ldots\right]\right]
$$

where $c_{n}^{E} \in E^{2 n}(B U)(n=1,2, \ldots)$ are the $E$-theory universal Chern classes. The coalgebra structure is given by

$$
\phi\left(c_{n}^{E}\right)=\sum_{i+j=n} c_{i}^{E} \otimes c_{j}^{E} \quad\left(c_{0}^{E}:=1\right)
$$

where the coproduct map ${ }^{6} \phi$ is induced from the multiplication $\mu: B U \times B U \longrightarrow B U$ that arises from the Whitney sum of complex vector bundles.
(2) The E-homology ring of $B U$ is given as follows:

$$
E_{*}(B U) \cong E_{*}\left[\beta_{1}^{E}, \beta_{2}^{E}, \ldots, \beta_{n}^{E}, \ldots\right]
$$

where $\beta_{n}^{E} \in E_{2 n}(B U)(n=1,2, \ldots)$ are the images of the elements $\beta_{n}^{E} \in E_{2 n}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right)$ under the induced homomorphism $E_{*}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right) \longrightarrow E_{*}(B U)$ from the natural map $\mathbb{C} P^{\infty} \simeq B U(1) \longrightarrow$ $B U$. The coalgebra structure is given by

$$
\phi\left(\beta_{n}^{E}\right)=\sum_{i+j=n} \beta_{i}^{E} \otimes \beta_{j}^{E} \quad\left(\beta_{0}^{E}:=1\right)
$$

where the coporoduct map $\phi$ is induced from the diagonal map $\Delta: B U \longrightarrow B U \times B U$.

Notice that the Kronecker product

$$
\langle-,-\rangle: E^{n}(B U) \times E_{m}(B U) \longrightarrow E_{m-n} \quad(n, m \in \mathbb{Z})
$$

induces the following isomorphism (see e.g., Switzer [62, pp.289-290, p.396])

$$
E^{n}(B U) \xrightarrow{\sim} \operatorname{Hom}_{E_{*}}^{-n}\left(E_{*}(B U), E_{*}\right)
$$

for each $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, and under this duality, $E^{*}(B U)$ and $E_{*}(B U)$ are mutually dual Hopf algebras over $E_{*}$. In what follows, we shall use the identification

$$
\begin{aligned}
& E^{*}(\Omega S U) \stackrel{\sim}{\sim} E^{*}(B U) \cong E^{*}\left[\left[c_{1}^{E}, c_{2}^{E}, \ldots, c_{n}^{E}, \ldots\right]\right], \\
& E_{*}(\Omega S U) \stackrel{\sim}{\sim} E_{*}(B U) \cong E_{*}\left[\beta_{1}^{E}, \beta_{2}^{E}, \ldots, \beta_{n}^{E}, \ldots\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

[^5]
## 2.3. $E$-homology of the loop space of $S p$

Let $S p=S p(\infty)$ be the infinite symplectic group and $\Omega S p$ its based loop space. Let

$$
q: S U(n) \longleftrightarrow S p(n), \quad c: S p(n) \longleftrightarrow S U(2 n)
$$

be the quaternionification and the complexification (or complex restriction) respectively. These maps induce the following sequence of inclusions:

$$
S U \stackrel{q}{\longrightarrow} S p \stackrel{c}{\hookrightarrow} S U .
$$

Further they induce the following maps of based loop spaces:

$$
\Omega S U \xrightarrow{\Omega q} \Omega S p \xrightarrow{\Omega c} \Omega S U .
$$

Consider the induced homomorphisms in E-homology:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega(c \circ q)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S U) \xrightarrow{(\Omega q)_{*}} E_{*}(\Omega S p) \xrightarrow{(\Omega c)_{*}} E_{*}(\Omega S U) . \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then one can show the following fact:
Lemma 2.3 (Kono-Kozima [31], Corollary 6.7). The homomorphism

$$
(\Omega c)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S p) \longrightarrow E_{*}(\Omega S U)
$$

is a split monomorphism.
Therefore we can regard the algebra $E_{*}(\Omega S p)$ as a subalgebra of $E_{*}(\Omega S U)$. Following the idea of Kono-Kozima [31] and Clarke [15], we shall describe this algebra explicitly. We extend the algebra homomorphism (4) to the following algebra homomorphism of formal power series rings:

$$
\Omega(c \circ q)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]] \longrightarrow E_{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]] .
$$

Let $\beta^{E}(T):=\sum_{i \geq 0} \beta_{i}^{E} T^{i} \in E_{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]]$ be the formal power series with coefficients in $E_{*}(\Omega S U)$. By a topological argument, Kono-Kozima calculated the image of $\beta^{E}(T)$ under the homomorphism $\Omega(c \circ q)_{*}$ :

Proposition 2.4 (Kono-Kozima [31], Theorem 2.9, Proposition 6.10; Clarke [15], p.18).

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega(c \circ q)_{*}\left(\beta^{E}(T)\right)=\frac{\beta^{E}(T)}{\beta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)} . \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

This formula will be crucial for our study later.

Remark 2.5. Here we make one important remark which gives a more geometric interpretation about the map $\Omega(c \circ q)$. Let $\gamma \longrightarrow B U$ be the universal (virtual) bundle over $B U$, and $\bar{\gamma}$ its conjugate bundle. Denote by $h: B U \longrightarrow B U$ the classifying map of $\gamma-\bar{\gamma}$. Then Clarke $[15$, Proof of Proposition 2] showed essentially that the following diagram is homotopy-commutative:


From this, the expression (5) follows easily (see Clarke [15, p.18]). The above construction (in the case of $S O$ ) of the map $h: B U \longrightarrow B U$ also appears in Baker [2, p.711], Ray [59, Theorem 7.1].

Example 2.6. For example, we compute ${ }^{7}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Omega(c \circ q)_{*}\left(\beta_{1}\right)=2 \beta_{1}, \\
& \Omega(c \circ q)_{*}\left(\beta_{2}\right)=2 \beta_{1}^{2}-a_{1,1} \beta_{1}, \\
& \Omega(c \circ q)_{*}\left(\beta_{3}\right)=2\left(\beta_{3}-\beta_{2} \beta_{1}+\beta_{1}^{3}\right)+2 a_{1,1} \beta_{2}-3 a_{1,1} \beta_{1}^{2}+a_{1,1}^{2} \beta_{1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

In Clarke [15, pp.16-17], he introduced the elements $\eta_{i}^{E} \in E_{2 i}(\Omega S p)$ ( $i=1,2, \ldots$ ) so as to satisfy the following relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\Omega q)_{*}\left(\beta^{E}(T)\right)=1+[2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}(T) \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\eta^{E}(T):=\sum_{j \geq 0} \eta_{j+1}^{E} T^{j} \in E_{*}(\Omega S p)[[T]]$. More explicitly, we have

$$
(\Omega q)_{*}\left(\beta_{l}\right)=\sum_{k=1}^{l} \alpha_{k} \eta_{l+1-k}=2 \eta_{l}+\alpha_{2} \eta_{l-1}+\cdots+\alpha_{l} \eta_{1} \quad(l=1,2, \ldots)
$$

Then in $E_{*}(\Omega S U)$, we have
$\Omega(c \circ q)_{*}\left(\beta_{l}\right)=2(\Omega c)_{*}\left(\eta_{l}\right)+\alpha_{2}(\Omega c)_{*}\left(\eta_{l-1}\right)+\cdots+\alpha_{l}(\Omega c)_{*}\left(\eta_{1}\right)(l=1,2, \ldots)$.
Using Proposition 2.4 and (8), we can express $(\Omega c)_{*}\left(\eta_{l}\right)(l=1,2, \ldots)$ in terms of $\beta_{j}(j=1,2, \ldots)$.

[^6]Example 2.7. Using Example 2.6 and (8), we compute

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (\Omega c)_{*}\left(\eta_{1}\right)=\beta_{1} \\
& (\Omega c)_{*}\left(\eta_{2}\right)=\beta_{1}^{2}-a_{1,1} \beta_{1} \\
& (\Omega c)_{*}\left(\eta_{3}\right)=\beta_{3}-\beta_{2} \beta_{1}+\beta_{1}^{3}+a_{1,1} \beta_{2}-2 a_{1,1} \beta_{1}^{2}+\left(a_{1,1}^{2}-a_{1,2}\right) \beta_{1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then it can be shown that $E_{*}(\Omega S p)$ is multiplicatively generated by $\eta_{1}^{E}, \eta_{2}^{E}, \ldots$ (Clarke [15, p.16, Corollary 4]). Moreover, one sees that $E_{*}(\Omega S p)$ is polynomially generated by $\eta_{1}^{E}, \eta_{3}^{E}, \eta_{5}^{E}, \ldots$ (Clarke [15, p.17]). More precisely, one can express the even $\eta_{2 i}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ in terms of the odd $\eta_{2 i-1}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ in the following way: By Proposition 2.4, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\beta^{E}(T)}{\beta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)} & =\Omega(c \circ q)_{*}\left(\beta^{E}(T)\right)=(\Omega c)_{*} \circ(\Omega q)_{*}\left(\beta^{E}(T)\right) \\
& =(\Omega c)_{*}\left(1+[2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}(T)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (\Omega c)_{*}\left(\left(1+[2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}(T)\right)\left(1+[2]_{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right) \eta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)\right)\right) \\
& =\frac{\beta^{E}(T)}{\beta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)} \cdot \frac{\beta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)}{\beta^{E}(T)}=1
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $(\Omega c)_{*}$ is injective, the elements $\eta_{i}^{E}$ 's satisty the following relation:

$$
\left(1+[2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}(T)\right)\left(1+[2]_{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right) \eta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)\right)=1
$$

or equivalently, we have the following (see Clarke [15, p.19]):

$$
\begin{align*}
& {[2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}(T)+[-2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right) } \\
&+[2]_{E}(T)[-2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}(T) \eta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)=0 . \tag{9}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the relation (9), it can be shown directly that $\eta_{2 i}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ can be eliminated (see Clarke [15, p.19], Examples 2.9 (3), 2.10 (3) below). The coproduct $\phi\left(\eta_{n}^{E}\right)$ can be obtained immediately by the definition of $\eta_{n}^{E}$ (see Clarke pp.17-18). Thus we obtain the following description of $E_{*}(\Omega S p)$ :

Theorem 2.8 (Clarke [15]). The Hopf algebra structure of $E_{*}(\Omega S p)$ is given as follows:
(1) As an algebra,

$$
\begin{aligned}
E_{*}(\Omega S p) & =\frac{E_{*}\left[\eta_{1}^{E}, \eta_{2}^{E}, \ldots, \eta_{i}^{E}, \ldots\right]}{\left(\left(1+[2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}(T)\right)\left(1+[2]_{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right) \eta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)\right)=1\right)} \\
& =E_{*}\left[\eta_{1}^{E}, \eta_{3}^{E}, \ldots, \eta_{2 i-1}^{E}, \ldots\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

(2) The coalgebra structure is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi\left(\eta_{1}^{E}\right)= & \eta_{1}^{E} \otimes 1+1 \otimes \eta_{1}^{E}, \\
\phi\left(\eta_{l}^{E}\right)= & \eta_{l}^{E} \otimes 1+1 \otimes \eta_{l}^{E}+\sum_{\substack{i+j+k=l, i, j \geq 1}} \alpha_{k+1}^{E} \eta_{i}^{E} \otimes \eta_{j}^{E} \\
= & \eta_{l}^{E} \otimes 1+1 \otimes \eta_{l}^{E}+2 \sum_{\substack{i+j=l, i, j \geq 1}} \eta_{i}^{E} \otimes \eta_{j}^{E}+\alpha_{2}^{E} \sum_{\substack{i+j=l-1, i, j \geq 1}} \eta_{i}^{E} \otimes \eta_{j}^{E} \\
& +\cdots+\alpha_{l-1}^{E} \eta_{1}^{E} \otimes \eta_{1}^{E} \quad(l \geq 2) .
\end{aligned}
$$

(3) The elements $\eta_{2 n}^{E}(n=1,2, \ldots)$ are inductively determined by the recursive formula:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& {[2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}(T)+[-2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right) } \\
&+[2]_{E}(T)[-2]_{E}(T) \eta^{E}(T) \eta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)=0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Example 2.9 (Kono-Kozima [31], Theorem 2.9). For the ordinary homology theory, we have

$$
[2]_{H}(T)=2 T \quad \text { and } \quad[-1]_{H}(T)=-T .
$$

From Theorem 2.8, the Hopf algebra structure of $H_{*}(\Omega S p)$ is given as follows:
(1) As an algebra,

$$
H_{*}(\Omega S p) \cong \mathbb{Z}\left[z_{1}, z_{3}, \ldots, z_{2 n-1}, \ldots\right]
$$

where we set $z_{i}=\eta_{i}^{H}(i=1,2, \ldots)$.
(2) The coalgebra structure is given by

$$
\phi\left(z_{n}\right)=z_{n} \otimes 1+1 \otimes z_{n}+2 \sum_{\substack{i+j=n, i, j \geq 1}} z_{i} \otimes z_{j} .
$$

(3) The elements $z_{2 n}(n=1,2, \ldots)$ are determined by the recursive formula:

$$
z_{2 n}+\sum_{\substack{i+j=2 n, i, j \geq 1}}(-1)^{i} z_{i} z_{j}=0 .
$$

Example 2.10 (Clarke [15], Theorem 1). For $\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}$-graded $K$ theory ${ }^{8}$, we have

$$
[2]_{K}(T)=2 T+T^{2} \quad \text { and } \quad[-1]_{K}(T)=-\frac{T}{1+T}
$$

From Theorem 2.8, the Hopf algebra structure of $K_{0}(\Omega S p)$ is given as follows:
(1) As an algebra,

$$
K_{0}(\Omega S p) \cong \mathbb{Z}\left[\eta_{1}^{K}, \eta_{3}^{K}, \ldots, \eta_{2 n-1}^{K}, \ldots\right]
$$

(2) The coalgebra structure is given by

$$
\phi\left(\eta_{n}^{K}\right)=\eta_{n}^{K} \otimes 1+1 \otimes \eta_{n}^{K}+2 \sum_{\substack{i+j=n, i, j \geq 1}} \eta_{i}^{K} \otimes \eta_{j}^{K}+\sum_{\substack{i+j=n-1, i, j \geq 1}} \eta_{i}^{K} \otimes \eta_{j}^{K}
$$

(3) The elements $\eta_{2 k}^{K}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ are determined by the recursive formula:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(2 \eta_{k}^{K}+\eta_{k-1}^{K}\right)+\sum_{i=1}^{k-1}(-1)^{i}\left(2 \eta_{k-i}^{K}+\eta_{k-i-1}^{K}\right) \sum_{j=1}^{i}\left\{2\binom{i-1}{j-1}+\binom{i-1}{j}\right\} \eta_{j}^{K} \\
& +(-1)^{k} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left\{2\binom{k-1}{j-1}+\binom{k-1}{j}\right\} \eta_{j}^{K}=0 \quad\left(\eta_{0}^{K}:=0\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 2.4. E-homology of the loop space of $S O$

Quite analogously, we can describe the $E$-homology Hopf algebra of the loop space on an infinite special orthogonal group $S O=S O(\infty)$. Let

$$
r: S U(n) \longleftrightarrow S O(2 n), \quad c: S O(n) \longleftrightarrow S U(n)
$$

be the real restriction and the complexification respectively. These maps induce the following sequence of inclusions:

$$
S U \stackrel{r}{\longleftrightarrow} S O \stackrel{c}{\hookrightarrow} S U .
$$

Further they induce the following maps on based loop spaces:

$$
\Omega S U \xrightarrow{\Omega r} \Omega_{0} S O \xrightarrow{\Omega c} \Omega S U
$$

[^7]Consider the induced homomorphisms in E-homology:

$$
\Omega(c \circ r)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S U) \xrightarrow{(\Omega r)_{*}} E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \xrightarrow{(\Omega c)_{*}} E_{*}(\Omega S U) .
$$

We can show the following facts:

## Lemma 2.11.

(1) The homomorphism $(\Omega r)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ is surjective.
(2) The homomorphism $(\Omega c)_{*}: E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \longrightarrow E_{*}(\Omega S U)$ is injective.

Proof. (1) According to Bott [6, p.44], as a generating variety for $S U(n)$ (resp. $S O(2 n)$ ), we can take the complex projective space $\mathbb{C} P^{n-1} \cong U(n) /(U(1) \times U(n-1))$ (resp. the even dimensional complex quadric $\left.Q_{2 n-2} \cong S O(2 n) /(S O(2) \times S O(2 n-2))\right)$. Let $g_{n}^{\prime}: \mathbb{C} P^{n-1} \longrightarrow$ $\Omega S U(n)$ (resp. $g_{n}^{\prime \prime}: Q_{2 n-2} \longrightarrow \Omega_{0} S O(2 n)$ ) be the corresponding generating map. Then we have the natural embedding $i_{n}: \mathbb{C} P^{n-1} \cong$ $U(n) /(U(1) \times U(n-1)) \longleftrightarrow Q_{2 n-2} \cong S O(2 n) /(S O(2) \times S O(2 n-2))$, and we have the following commutative diagram:


Letting $n \rightarrow \infty$, this diagram induces the following commutative diagram:


Note that the vertical map $i_{\infty}: \mathbb{C} P^{\infty} \xrightarrow{\sim} Q_{\infty}$ is a homotopy equivalence. Passing to homology, we have the following commutative diagram:

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
H_{*}\left(\mathbb{C} P^{\infty}\right) \xrightarrow{g_{\infty *}^{\prime}} & H_{*}(\Omega S U) \\
i_{\infty *} \downarrow \cong & & \downarrow(\Omega r)_{*} \\
H_{*}\left(Q_{\infty}\right) & \xrightarrow{g_{\infty *}^{\prime \prime}} & H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)
\end{array}
$$

By the result of Bott [6, p.36, Theorem 1] again, the Pontrjagin ring $H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ is generated by $\operatorname{Im} g_{\infty *}^{\prime \prime}$ as an algebra. From this along with
the isomorphism $i_{\infty *}$, the surjectivity of $(\Omega r)_{*}$ follows. For a complex oriented generalized homology theory $E_{*}(-)$, we argue as follows: By the universality of the complex bordism homology theory $M U_{*}(-)$, it is sufficient to prove that the homomorphism $(\Omega r)_{*}: M U_{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow$ $M U_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ is surjective. Since both $H_{*}(\Omega S U)$ and $H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ are concentrated in even degrees and $M U_{*}=M U_{*}(\mathrm{pt})$ is also evenly graded, the homology Atiyah-Hirzebruch spectral sequence

$$
E^{2}=H_{*}\left(X ; M U_{*}\right) \cong H_{*}(X) \otimes M U_{*} \quad \Longrightarrow \quad M U_{*}(X)
$$

collapses for $X=\Omega S U$ and $\Omega_{0} S O$. As a consequence, we have an isomorphism $M U_{*}(X) \cong H_{*}(X) \otimes M U_{*}$ for $X=\Omega S U$ and $\Omega_{0} S O$. Therefore the surjection $(\Omega r)_{*}: H_{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ induces a surjection $(\Omega r)_{*}: M U_{*}(\Omega S U) \cong H_{*}(\Omega S U) \otimes M U_{*} \longrightarrow M U_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong$ $H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \otimes M U_{*}$ since $M U_{*}$ is free as a $\mathbb{Z}$-module.
(2) By the Bott periodicity, we have homotopy equivalences

$$
S O / U \xrightarrow{\sim} \Omega_{0} S O \quad \text { and } \quad g_{\infty}: B U \xrightarrow{\sim} \Omega S U,
$$

and the following diagram is commutative (see e.g., Cartan [12, p.11]):

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
S O / U \xrightarrow{\chi} B U \\
\simeq \downarrow & & g_{\infty} \downarrow \simeq  \tag{10}\\
\Omega_{0} S O \xrightarrow[\Omega c]{ } & \Omega S U,
\end{array}
$$

where $\chi$ is induced from the inclusion $S O(2 n) / U(n) \longleftrightarrow U(2 n) /(U(n) \times$ $U(n)$ ) (note that $\chi$ is the fiber inclusion of the Borel fibration $S O / U \xrightarrow{\chi}$ $B U \longrightarrow B S O)$. Therefore we have to show that $\chi_{*}: H_{*}(S O / U) \longrightarrow$ $H_{*}(B U)$ is injective. In cohomology, it is well known that $\chi^{*} \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ : $H^{*}(B U) \otimes \mathbb{Q} \longrightarrow H^{*}(S O / U) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ is surjective. From this and the fact that $H_{*}(S O / U)$ is torsion free, the injectivity of $\chi_{*}$ follows. For a complex oriented generalized homology theory $E_{*}(-)$, the same discussion as in (1) above can be applied, and we obtain the required result. Q.E.D.

By means of the monomorphism $(\Omega c)_{*}$, we can regard $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ as a subalgebra of $E_{*}(\Omega S U)$. We shall describe this algebra explicitly. Since $(\Omega r)_{*}$ is surjective, if we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau_{i}^{E}:=(\Omega r)_{*}\left(\beta_{i}^{E}\right)(i=1,2, \ldots) \tag{11}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ is generated by $\tau_{i}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ as an algebra. We shall determine the relations that $\tau_{i}^{E}$ 's satisfy. Let $\beta^{E}(T):=\sum_{i \geq 0} \beta_{i}^{E} T^{i} \in$
$E_{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]]$ be the formal power series with coefficients in $E_{*}(\Omega S U)$, and consider the following ring homomorphism

$$
\Omega(c \circ r)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]] \longrightarrow E_{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]] .
$$

Then by the similar manner to Proposition 2.4, one can show the following:

## Proposition 2.12.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega(c \circ r)_{*}\left(\beta^{E}(T)\right)=\frac{\beta^{E}(T)}{\beta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)} . \tag{12}
\end{equation*}
$$

We put $\tau^{E}(T):=\sum_{i \geq 0} \tau_{i}^{E} T^{i} \in E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)[[T]]\left(\tau_{0}^{E}:=1\right)$. By definition, we have

$$
(\Omega r)_{*}\left(\beta^{E}(T)\right)=\tau^{E}(T)
$$

and hence

$$
\frac{\beta^{E}(T)}{\beta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)}=\Omega(c \circ r)_{*}\left(\beta^{E}(T)\right)=(\Omega c)_{*} \circ(\Omega r)_{*}\left(\beta^{E}(T)\right)=(\Omega c)_{*}\left(\tau^{E}(T)\right)
$$

Therefore we have

$$
(\Omega c)_{*}\left(\tau^{E}(T) \tau^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)\right)=\frac{\beta^{E}(T)}{\beta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)} \cdot \frac{\beta^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)}{\beta^{E}(T)}=1
$$

Since $(\Omega c)_{*}$ is injective, we obtain the following relation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau^{E}(T) \tau^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)=1 \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $E=H$, the ordinary homology theory, $H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ can be easily obtained from the result of Bott [6, Propositions 9.1 and 10.1]. It is generated by $\tau_{i}^{H}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ and these elements satisfy the relation (13) for $E=H$, namely $\tau^{H}(T) \tau^{H}(-T)=1$. Since $E$-homology AtiyahHirzebruch spectral sequence

$$
E^{2}=H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O ; E_{*}\right) \cong H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \otimes E_{*} \quad \Longrightarrow \quad E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)
$$

collapses by degree reasons, no other relations except (13) can arise. Thus we obtain the following description of $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ :

Theorem 2.13. The Hopf algebra structure of $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ is given as follows:
(1) As an algebra,

$$
E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)=\frac{E_{*}\left[\tau_{1}^{E}, \tau_{2}^{E}, \ldots, \tau_{i}^{E}, \ldots\right]}{\left(\tau^{E}(T) \tau^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)=1\right)},
$$

where $\left(\tau^{E}(T) \tau^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)=1\right)$ means an ideal in $E_{*}\left[\tau_{1}^{E}, \tau_{2}^{E}, \ldots\right]$ generated by the coefficients of the formal power series $\tau^{E}(T) \tau^{E}\left([-1]_{E}(T)\right)-1$.
(2) The coalgebra structure is given by

$$
\phi\left(\tau_{n}^{E}\right)=\sum_{i+j=n} \tau_{i}^{E} \otimes \tau_{j}^{E} \quad\left(\tau_{0}^{E}=1\right)
$$

Remark 2.14. Baker [2, Proposition 3.3] described the E-homology $E_{*}(S O / U)$ of $S O / U$. By the homotopy equivalence $S O / U \simeq \Omega_{0} S O$ derived from the Bott periodicity theorem, his description of $E_{*}(S O / U)$ is the same as that of Theorem 2.13.

Example 2.15 (Bott [6], Propositions 9.1 and 10.1). For the ordinary homology theory, we have

$$
[2]_{H}(T)=2 T \quad \text { and } \quad[-1]_{H}(T)=-T
$$

From Theorem 2.13, the Hopf algebra structure of $H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ is given as follows:
(1) As an algebra,

$$
H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}\left[\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}, \ldots, \tau_{n}, \ldots\right] /\left(\tau_{i}^{2}+2 \sum_{j=1}^{i}(-1)^{j} \tau_{i+j} \tau_{i-j}(i \geq 1)\right)
$$

(2) The coalgebra structure is given by

$$
\phi\left(\tau_{n}\right)=\sum_{i+j=n} \tau_{i} \otimes \tau_{j}
$$

## 2.5. $E$-cohomology of the loop space of $S p$

In a similar manner as in $\S 2.3$, we can describe the $E$-cohomology Hopf algebra of $\Omega S p$. We consider the maps of based loop spaces

$$
\Omega S U \xrightarrow{\Omega q} \Omega S p \xrightarrow{\Omega c} \Omega S U,
$$

and the induced homomorphisms in $E$-cohomology:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E^{*}(\Omega S U) \stackrel{(\Omega q)^{*}}{\longleftarrow} E^{*}(\Omega S p) \stackrel{(\Omega c)^{*}}{\longleftarrow} E^{*}(\Omega S U) \tag{14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we can show the following fact:

## Lemma 2.16.

(1) $(\Omega c)^{*}: E^{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow E^{*}(\Omega S p)$ is surjective.
(2) $(\Omega q)^{*}: E^{*}(\Omega S p) \longrightarrow E^{*}(\Omega S U)$ is injective.

Proof. (1) By the Bott periodicity theorem, we have the homotopy equivalences

$$
S p / U \xrightarrow{\sim} \Omega S p \quad \text { and } \quad g_{\infty}: B U \xrightarrow{\sim} \Omega S U,
$$

and the following diagram is commutative (see e.g., Cartan [12, p.10]):

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
S p / U \xrightarrow{\chi} B U  \tag{15}\\
\simeq \downarrow & \\
\Omega S p \xrightarrow[\Omega c]{ } & \Omega S U,
\end{array}
$$

where $\chi$ is induced from the inclusion $S p(n) / U(n) \longleftrightarrow U(2 n) /(U(n) \times$ $U(n)$ ) (note that $\chi$ is the fiber inclusion of the Borel fibration $S p / U \xrightarrow{\chi}$ $B U \longrightarrow B S p)$. Therefore it suffices to show that $\chi^{*}: E^{*}(B U) \longrightarrow$ $E^{*}(S p / U)$ is surjective. For $E=H$, the ordinary cohomology theory, this follows immediately from the fact that the Leray-Serre spectral sequence (with integer coefficients) for the Borel fibration $S p / U \xrightarrow{\chi}$ $B U \longrightarrow B S p$ collapses. Then the collapsing of the Atiyah-Hirzebruch spectral sequence

$$
E_{2}=H^{*}\left(X ; M U^{*}\right) \cong H^{*}(X) \hat{\otimes} M U^{*} \quad \Longrightarrow \quad M U^{*}(X)
$$

for $X=B U$ and $S p / U$ implies that $M U^{*}(X) \cong H^{*}(X) \hat{\otimes} M U^{*}{ }^{9}$ for $X=B U$ and $S p / U$, and we obtain the desired result (by the universality of $\left.M U^{*}(-)\right)$.
(2) First we show that $(\Omega q)^{*}: H^{*}(\Omega S p) \longrightarrow H^{*}(\Omega S U)$ is injective. By a result of Kono-Kozima (see Example 2.9), there exists elements $z_{i} \in H_{2 i}(\Omega S p)$ such that $(\Omega q)_{*}\left(\beta_{i}\right)=\frac{1}{2} z_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$, and $H_{*}(\Omega S p)$ is generated by $z_{i}$ 's as an algebra. Therefore with rational coefficients, $(\Omega q)_{*} \otimes \mathbb{Q}: H_{*}(\Omega S U) \otimes \mathbb{Q} \longrightarrow H_{*}(\Omega S p) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ is surjective. This implies that $(\Omega q)^{*} \otimes \mathbb{Q}: H^{*}(\Omega S p) \otimes \mathbb{Q} \longrightarrow H^{*}(\Omega S U) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ is injective. Since $H^{*}(\Omega S p)$ and $H^{*}(\Omega S U)$ are torsion free, it follows that $(\Omega q)^{*}: H^{*}(\Omega S p) \longrightarrow H^{*}(\Omega S U)$ is also injective. Again analogous argument as in (1) above shows that $(\Omega q)^{*}: E^{*}(\Omega S p) \longrightarrow E^{*}(\Omega S U)$ is injective for any complex oriented generalized cohomology theory. Q.E.D.

[^8]By means of the monomorphism $(\Omega q)^{*}$, we can regard the algebra $E^{*}(\Omega S p)$ as a subalgebra of $E^{*}(\Omega S U)$. Using the same idea as in $\S 2.4$, we shall identify this algebra explicitly. We define the elements of $E^{*}(\Omega S p)$ to be

$$
\mu_{i}^{E}:=(\Omega c)^{*}\left(c_{i}^{E}\right)(i=1,2, \ldots)
$$

We shall determine the relations that $\mu_{i}^{E}$ 's satisfy. As stated in $\S 2.2$, the Chern classes $c_{i}^{E}$ 's can be identified with the elementary symmetric functions in the variables $x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots$. This means that the total Chern class of the universal bundle $\gamma$ on $B U$ can be written formally as

$$
c^{E}(\gamma)=\sum_{i \geq 0} c_{i}^{E}=\prod_{i \geq 1}\left(1+x_{i}\right)
$$

Then the total Chern class of the conjugate bundle $\bar{\gamma}$ can be written as

$$
c^{E}(\bar{\gamma})=\sum_{i \geq 0} c_{i}^{E}(\bar{\gamma})=\prod_{i \geq 1}\left(1+\bar{x}_{i}\right)
$$

Therefore, by the definition of the map $h: B U \longrightarrow B U$ (see Remark 2.5), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
c^{E}(\gamma-\bar{\gamma})=\frac{c^{E}(\gamma)}{c^{E}(\bar{\gamma})}=\prod_{i \geq 1} \frac{1+x_{i}}{1+\bar{x}_{i}} \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

With these preliminaries, we argue as follows: The algebra homomorphism (14) extends to the algebra homomorphism of formal power series rings:

$$
\Omega(c \circ q)^{*}: E^{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]] \longrightarrow E^{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]] .
$$

We put $c^{E}(T):=\sum_{i \geq 0} c_{i}^{E} T^{i} \in E^{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]]$, and we would like to calculate the image of this formal power series. First we can write formally

$$
c^{E}(T)=\sum_{i \geq 0} c_{i}^{E} T^{i}=\prod_{i \geq 1}\left(1+x_{i} T\right)
$$

Define the formal power series $\overline{c^{E}}(T):=\sum_{i \geq 0} \overline{c_{i}^{E}} T^{i}$ by

$$
\overline{c^{E}}(T)=\sum_{i \geq 0} \overline{c_{i}^{E}} T^{i}=\prod_{i \geq 1}\left(1+\bar{x}_{i} T\right)
$$

Then the homotopy-commutative diagram (6) and the formula (16) imply the following:

## Proposition 2.17.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega(c \circ q)^{*}\left(c^{E}(T)\right)=\frac{c^{E}(T)}{\overline{c^{E}}(T)} \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

We also define

$$
\overline{\mu_{i}^{E}}:=(\Omega c)^{*}\left(\overline{c_{i}^{E}}\right)(i=1,2, \ldots),
$$

and we put $\mu^{E}(T):=\sum_{i \geq 0} \mu_{i}^{E} T^{i}, \overline{\mu^{E}}(T)=\sum_{i \geq 0} \overline{\mu_{i}^{E}} T^{i} \in E^{*}(\Omega S p)[[T]]$ $\left(\mu_{0}^{E}:=1, \overline{\mu_{0}^{E}}:=1\right)$. By definition, we have

$$
(\Omega c)^{*}\left(c^{E}(T)\right)=\mu^{E}(T)
$$

and hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{c^{E}(T)}{\overline{c^{E}}(T)}=\Omega(c \circ q)^{*}\left(c^{E}(T)\right)=(\Omega q)^{*} \circ(\Omega c)^{*}\left(c^{E}(T)\right)=(\Omega q)^{*}\left(\mu^{E}(T)\right), \\
& \frac{\overline{c^{E}}(T)}{c^{E}(T)}=\Omega(c \circ q)^{*}\left(\overline{c^{E}}(T)\right)=(\Omega q)^{*} \circ(\Omega c)^{*}\left(\overline{c^{E}}(T)\right)=(\Omega q)^{*}\left(\overline{\mu^{E}}(T)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore we have

$$
(\Omega q)^{*}\left(\mu^{E}(T) \overline{\mu^{E}}(T)\right)=\frac{c^{E}(T)}{\overline{c^{E}}(T)} \cdot \frac{\overline{c^{E}}(T)}{c^{E}(T)}=1
$$

Since $(\Omega q)^{*}$ is injective, the following relation holds:

$$
\mu^{E}(T) \overline{\mu^{E}}(T)=1
$$

Thus we obtain the following description of $E^{*}(\Omega S p)$ :
Theorem 2.18. The Hopf algebra structure of $E^{*}(\Omega S p)$ is given as follows:
(1) As an algebra,

$$
E^{*}(\Omega S p)=\frac{E^{*}\left[\left[\mu_{1}^{E}, \mu_{2}^{E}, \ldots, \mu_{i}^{E}, \ldots\right]\right]}{\left(\mu^{E}(T) \overline{\mu^{E}}(T)=1\right)} .
$$

(2) The coalgebra structure is given by

$$
\phi\left(\mu_{n}^{E}\right)=\sum_{i+j=n} \mu_{i}^{E} \otimes \mu_{j}^{E} \quad\left(\mu_{0}^{E}=1\right)
$$

Remark 2.19. In [14, Proposition 6.1], Clarke computed the Ktheory of a Lagrangian Grassmannian manifold $W_{n}:=\operatorname{Sp}(n) / U(n)$. In the limit $n \rightarrow \infty, S p / U$ is homotopy equivalent to $\Omega S p$ by the Bott periodicity theorem, and therefore his result gives a description of $K^{*}(\Omega S p)$.

### 2.6. E-cohomology of the loop space of $S O$

Analogously we can describe the $E$-cohomology Hopf algebra of $\Omega_{0} S O$. We consider the maps of based loop spaces

$$
\Omega S U \xrightarrow{\Omega r} \Omega_{0} S O \xrightarrow{\Omega c} \Omega S U,
$$

and the induced homomorphisms in $E$-cohomology:

$$
E^{*}(\Omega S U) \stackrel{(\Omega r)^{*}}{\longleftarrow} E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \stackrel{(\Omega c)^{*}}{\longleftarrow} E^{*}(\Omega S U)
$$

Then we can show the following fact:
Lemma 2.20. The homomorphism $(\Omega r)^{*}: E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \longrightarrow E^{*}(\Omega S U)$ is a split monomorphism.

Proof. In Lemma 2.11, we proved that $(\Omega r)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow$ $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ is surjective. Since both $E_{*}(\Omega S U)$ and $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ are free $E_{*}$-modules, the result follows.
Q.E.D.

By means of the monomorphism $(\Omega r)^{*}$, we can regard the algebra $E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ as a subalgebra of $E^{*}(\Omega S U)$. However, unlike the case of $S p$, the homomorphism $(\Omega c)^{*}$ is not a surjection in general, and we have not been able to find the generators of $E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ for generalized cohomology theory. Here we only comment the following fact: In the case of ordinary cohomology theory, we know that there exists a homotopy equivalence $S O / U \simeq \Omega_{0} S O$ by the Bott periodicity theorem. Therefore we have the isomorphism of algebras: $H^{*}(S O / U) \cong H^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$. The integral cohomology ring $H^{*}(S O / U)$ is well known since Borel (see e.g., Cartan [13, 11. Homologie et cohomologie de $S O(X) / U(X)]$ ), and it is a polynomial algebra generated by the elements of degrees $4 k+2(k=0,1,2, \ldots)$. Then by the collapse of the Atiyah-Hirzebruch spectral sequence

$$
E_{2}=H^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O ; E^{*}\right) \cong H^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \hat{\otimes} E^{*} \quad \Longrightarrow \quad E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)
$$

we know that $E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ is of the form

$$
E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong E^{*}\left[\left[y_{1}^{E}, y_{3}^{E}, \ldots, y_{2 k+1}^{E}, \ldots\right]\right]
$$

where $y_{2 k+1}^{E} \in E^{4 k+2}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)(k=0,1,2, \ldots)$.
Finally we state the analogous formula to Proposition 2.17, which might be useful for the description of $E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$. Let $c^{E}(T):=$ $\sum_{i \geq 0} c_{i}^{E} T^{i} \in E^{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]]$ be the formal power series ring with coefficients in $E^{*}(\Omega S U)$, and we write formally

$$
c^{E}(T)=\sum_{i \geq 0} c_{i}^{E} T^{i}=\prod_{i \geq 1}\left(1+x_{i} T\right)
$$

We also put

$$
\overline{c^{E}}(T)=\sum_{i \geq 0} \overline{c_{i}^{E}} T^{i}=\prod_{i \geq 1}\left(1+\bar{x}_{i} T\right) .
$$

Consider the ring homomorphism

$$
\Omega(c \circ r)^{*}: E^{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]] \longrightarrow E^{*}(\Omega S U)[[T]] .
$$

Then by the similar manner to Proposition 2.17, one can show the following:

## Proposition 2.21.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega(c \circ r)^{*}\left(c^{E}(T)\right)=\frac{c^{E}(T)}{\overline{c^{E}}(T)} \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 2.22. Baker [2, Proposition 3.12] described $E^{*}(S O / U)$. He asserted that

$$
E^{*}(S O / U) \cong E^{*}\left[\left[y_{1}^{E}, y_{3}^{E}, \ldots, y_{2 k+1}^{E}, \ldots\right]\right]
$$

where the elements $y_{2 k+1}^{E} \in E^{4 k+2}(S O / U)$ are dual to a certain $E_{*}$ basis for the module $P E_{*}(S O / U)$ of primitive elements. Notice that the formula in that paper $[2, \mathrm{p} .713]$, " $\phi^{*} \chi^{*} c^{E}(T)=c^{E}(T) c^{E}([-1](T))^{-1}$ " should be corrected as in (18).

## §3. Rings of $E$-(co)homology Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions

In this section, we introduce the $E$-theoretic analogues of the rings of Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions, and describe the $E$-(co)homology of $\Omega S U$, $\Omega S p$, and $\Omega_{0} S O$ in terms of symmetric functions.

### 3.1. Ring of symmetric functions

We use standard notations for symmetric functions as in Macdonald [46]. Let $\Lambda=\Lambda(\mathbf{x})$ be the ring of symmetric functions with integer coefficients in infinitely many variables $\mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\right)$. In the sequel, we provide the variables $x_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ with degree $\operatorname{deg}\left(x_{i}\right)=1$, and regard $\Lambda$ as a graded algebra over $\mathbb{Z}$. When we work with the finite set of variables $\mathbf{x}_{n}=\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$, we denote by $\Lambda\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ the ring of symmetric polynomials, namely $\Lambda\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)=\mathbb{Z}\left[x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]^{S_{n}}$, where $S_{n}$ is the symmetric group on $n$ letters acting on $\mathbf{x}_{n}=\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ by permutations. Then $\Lambda(\mathbf{x})$ is the inverse limit of the $\Lambda\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ in the category of graded rings. Note that it is possible to describe $\Lambda(\mathbf{x})$ by using the formal power series ring instead of the inverse limits (see Hoffman-Humphreys $[21$, p.92], Stanley $[60, \S 7.1])$. Thus $\Lambda(\mathbf{x}) \subset \mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{x}]]=\mathbb{Z}\left[\left[x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\right]\right]$.

We denote by $e_{i}=e_{i}(\mathbf{x})(i=1,2, \ldots)$ (resp. $h_{i}=h_{i}(\mathbf{x})(i=$ $1,2, \ldots)$ ) the $i$-th elementary symmetric function (resp. the $i$-th complete symmetric function). The generating functions are respectively given by
$E(T)=\sum_{i \geq 0} e_{i} T^{i}=\prod_{i \geq 1}\left(1+x_{i} T\right) \quad$ and $\quad H(T)=\sum_{i \geq 0} h_{i} T^{i}=\prod_{i \geq 1} \frac{1}{1-x_{i} T}$
( $e_{0}:=1$ and $h_{0}:=1$ ). Note that the relation $H(T) E(-T)=1$ holds. It is well known that $\Lambda$ is a polynomial algebra over $\mathbb{Z}$ in both $e_{i}(i=$ $1,2, \ldots)$ and $h_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$ :

$$
\Lambda=\mathbb{Z}\left[e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots\right]=\mathbb{Z}\left[h_{1}, h_{2}, \ldots\right]
$$

Furthermore, by the coproduct (or comultiplication, diagonal map),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi\left(e_{k}\right)=\sum_{i+j=k} e_{i} \otimes e_{j} \quad \text { and } \quad \phi\left(h_{k}\right)=\sum_{i+j=k} h_{i} \otimes h_{j}, \tag{19}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\Lambda$ is a commutative and co-commutative Hopf algebra over $\mathbb{Z}$ (see Macdonald [46, I, §5, Examples 25]). Using the Hall inner product $\langle-,-\rangle$ : $\Lambda \times \Lambda \longrightarrow \mathbb{Z}$ (see Macdonald [46, I, $\S 4$, (4.5)]), we can identify $\Lambda$ with its graded dual $\Lambda^{*}=\operatorname{Hom}(\Lambda, \mathbb{Z})$.

Next we recall the Schur $Q$ - and $P$-functions (for details, see Macdonald [46, III, §8]). Define $Q_{k}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ as the coefficients of $T^{k}$ in the generating function

$$
Q(T)=\sum_{k \geq 0} Q_{k} T^{k}:=\prod_{i \geq 1} \frac{1+x_{i} T}{1-x_{i} T}=H(T) E(T)
$$

$\left(Q_{0}:=1\right)$. In other words, $Q_{k}$ is defined to be $Q_{k}:=\sum_{i+j=k} h_{i} e_{j}$. The obvious identity $Q(T) Q(-T)=1$ yields the following relations:

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q_{i}^{2}+2 \sum_{j=1}^{i}(-1)^{j} Q_{i+j} Q_{i-j}=0 \quad(i \geq 1) \tag{20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $\Gamma$ to be the subalgebra of $\Lambda$ generated by $Q_{i}$ 's. Then we have

$$
\Gamma=\mathbb{Z}\left[Q_{1}, Q_{2}, \ldots, Q_{i}, \ldots\right] /\left(Q_{i}^{2}+2 \sum_{j=1}^{i}(-1)^{j} Q_{i+j} Q_{i-j}(i \geq 1)\right)
$$

The function $P_{k}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ is defined by $P_{k}:=\frac{1}{2} Q_{k}=\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i+j=k} h_{i} e_{j}$. By (20), $P_{i}$ 's satisfy the following relations:

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{i}^{2}+2 \sum_{j=1}^{i-1}(-1)^{j} P_{i+j} P_{i-j}+(-1)^{i} P_{2 i}=0 \quad(i \geq 1) \tag{21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that by the above relations (21), we can eliminate $P_{2 i}(i \geq 1)$. Define $\Gamma^{\prime}$ to be the subalgebra of $\Lambda$ generated by $P_{i}$ 's. By definition, $\Gamma \subset \Gamma^{\prime} \subset \Lambda$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Gamma^{\prime} & =\mathbb{Z}\left[P_{1}, P_{2}, \ldots, P_{i}, \ldots\right] /\left(P_{i}^{2}+2 \sum_{j=1}^{i-1}(-1)^{j} P_{i+j} P_{i-j}+(-1)^{i} P_{2 i}(i \geq 1)\right) \\
& =\mathbb{Z}\left[P_{1}, P_{3}, \ldots, P_{2 n-1}, \ldots\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

These two subalgebras $\Gamma$ and $\Gamma^{\prime}$ also have natural Hopf algebra structures (for the Hopf algebra structures on $\Gamma$ and $\Gamma^{\prime}$, readers are referred to e.g., Lam-Schilling-Shimozono [39, §2]). The coproduct is given by

$$
\phi\left(Q_{k}\right)=\sum_{i+j=k} Q_{i} \otimes Q_{j} \quad \text { and } \quad \phi\left(P_{k}\right)=P_{k} \otimes 1+1 \otimes P_{k}+2 \sum_{i+j=k, i, j \geq 1} P_{i} \otimes P_{j}
$$

One can also define the pairing $[-,-]: \Gamma^{\prime} \times \Gamma \longrightarrow \mathbb{Z}$ (Lam-SchillingShimozono [39, (2.14)], Macdonald [46, III, §8, (8.12)], Stembridge [61, (5.2)]), and then $\Gamma$ and $\Gamma^{\prime}$ are dual Hopf algebras each other with respect to this pairing.

### 3.2. Rings of $E$-homology Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions

Motivated by the description of $E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ and $E_{*}(\Omega S p)$ in the previous two subsections $\S 2.3$ and 2.4 , we define $E$-homology analogues of the rings of Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions (Definitions 3.4 and 3.7). First we define

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Lambda_{*}^{E}:=E_{*} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \Lambda \quad(\text { extension of coefficients }) \\
& \Lambda_{E}^{*}:=\operatorname{Hom}_{E_{*}}\left(\Lambda_{*}^{E}, E_{*}\right) \quad\left(\text { graded dual of } \Lambda_{*}^{E}\right) \tag{22}
\end{align*}
$$

Then $\Lambda_{*}^{E}$ inherits naturally the Hopf algebra structure from that of $\Lambda$. Actually it is obvious from the definition that $\Lambda_{*}^{E}=E_{*}\left[h_{1}, h_{2}, \ldots\right]$, and the coalgebra structure is given by (19). Dually, $\Lambda_{E}^{*}=E^{*}\left[\left[e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots\right]\right]$, the formal power series ring in $e_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$, and the coalgebra structure is also given by (19). One can verify this latter assertion by purely algebraic manner (see e.g., May-Pont [48, §21.4]).

Definition 3.1 (E-homology Schur $Q$-functions). We define $\widehat{q}_{k}^{E}=$ $\widehat{q}_{k}^{E}(\mathbf{y}) \in \Lambda_{*}^{E}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ as the coefficients of the generating function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{q}^{E}(T)=\sum_{k \geq 0} \widehat{q}_{k}^{E} T^{k}=\frac{H(T)}{H(\bar{T})}=\prod_{i \geq 1} \frac{1-\bar{T} y_{i}}{1-T y_{i}} \in \Lambda_{*}^{E}[[T]] \tag{23}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\left(\widehat{q}_{0}^{E}:=1\right)$.

For $E=H$, the ordinary homology theory, the formal inverse $\bar{T}=$ $[-1]_{H}(T)=-T$, and hence $\widehat{q}_{k}^{H}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ coincide with the usual Schur $Q$-functions $Q_{k}=\sum_{i+j=k} h_{i} e_{j}(k=1,2, \ldots)$. By definition,

$$
\widehat{q}^{E}(T)=H(T) E(-\bar{T})=\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} h_{i} T^{i}\right)\left(\sum_{j \geq 0} e_{j}(-\bar{T})^{j}\right),
$$

and since $\bar{T}=-T+$ higher terms in $T$, we have

$$
\widehat{q}_{k}^{E}=Q_{k}+\text { lower terms in } \mathbf{y}=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots\right)
$$

Example 3.2. By the same calculation as in Example 2.6, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widehat{q}_{1}^{E} & =2 h_{1}=Q_{1} \\
\widehat{q}_{2}^{E} & =2 h_{1}^{2}-a_{1,1} h_{1}=Q_{2}-a_{1,1} h_{1} \\
\widehat{q}_{3}^{E} & =2\left(h_{3}-h_{2} h_{1}+h_{1}^{3}\right)+2 a_{1,1} h_{2}-3 a_{1,1} h_{1}^{2}+a_{1,1}^{2} h_{1} \\
& =Q_{3}+2 a_{1,1} h_{2}-3 a_{1,1} h_{1}^{2}+a_{1,1}^{2} h_{1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By Definition 3.1, the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{q}^{E}(T) \widehat{q}^{E}(\bar{T})=1 \tag{24}
\end{equation*}
$$

holds.
Example 3.3. For example, the relations in low degrees are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\widehat{q}_{1}^{E}\right)^{2}= & 2 \widehat{q}_{2}^{E}+a_{1,1} \widehat{q}_{1}^{E}, \\
\left(\widehat{q}_{2}^{E}\right)^{2}= & -2 \widehat{q}_{4}^{E}+2 \widehat{q}_{3}^{E} \widehat{q}_{1}^{E}-3 a_{1,1} \widehat{q}_{3}^{E}+a_{1,1} \widehat{q}_{2}^{E} \widehat{q}_{1}^{E}-a_{1,1}^{2} \widehat{q}_{2}^{E} \\
& +\left(-a_{1,1} a_{1,2}-2 a_{1,3}+a_{2,2}\right) \widehat{q}_{1}^{E} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Definition 3.4 (Ring of E-homology Schur $Q$-functions). Define $\Gamma_{*}^{E}$ to be the $E_{*}$-subalgebra of $\Lambda_{*}^{E}=E_{*} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \Lambda$ generated by $\widehat{q}_{1}^{E}, \widehat{q}_{2}^{E}, \ldots$. More explicitly we define

$$
\Gamma_{*}^{E}=E_{*}\left[\widehat{q}_{1}^{E}, \widehat{q}_{2}^{E}, \ldots, \widehat{q}_{i}^{E}, \ldots\right] /\left(\widehat{q}^{E}(T) \widehat{q}^{E}(\bar{T})=1\right) \longleftrightarrow \Lambda_{*}^{E} .
$$

For $E=H$, the ordinary homology theory, $\widehat{q}_{i}^{H}=Q_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$, and hence $\Gamma_{*}^{H}=\Gamma=\mathbb{Z}\left[Q_{1}, Q_{2}, \ldots\right] /(Q(T) Q(-T)=1)$ is the ring of Schur $Q$-functions.

Analogously, we make the following definition.

Definition 3.5 (E-homology Schur P-functions). We define $\widehat{p}_{k}^{E}=$ $\widehat{p}_{k}^{E}(\mathbf{y}) \in \Lambda_{*}^{E}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ by the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
1+[2]_{E}(T) \widehat{p}^{E}(T)=1+\left(T+{ }_{\mu} T\right) \widehat{p}^{E}(T)=\widehat{q}^{E}(T) \in \Lambda_{*}^{E}[[T]] \tag{25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we put $\widehat{p}^{E}(T):=\sum_{j \geq 0} \widehat{p}_{j+1}^{E} T^{j}$. Equivalently, since

$$
[2]_{E}(T) \widehat{p}^{E}(T)=\left(\sum_{i \geq 1} \alpha_{i}^{E} T^{i}\right)\left(\sum_{j \geq 0} \hat{p}_{j+1}^{E} T^{j}\right)=\sum_{k \geq 1}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{k} \alpha_{k+1-j}^{E} \hat{p}_{j}^{E}\right) T^{k}
$$

$\hat{p}_{k}^{E}$ 's are defined by the recursive formulas:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{q}_{k}^{E}=\sum_{j=1}^{k} \alpha_{k+1-j}^{E} \widehat{p}_{j}^{E}=2 \widehat{p}_{k}^{E}+\alpha_{2}^{E} \widehat{p}_{k-1}^{E}+\cdots+\alpha_{k}^{E} \widehat{p}_{1}^{E}(k=1,2, \ldots) \tag{26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Actually we have to show that each $\widehat{p}_{k}^{E}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ can be determined uniquely as an element of $\Lambda_{*}^{E}$ by these formulas. By (25), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
[2]_{E}(T) \widehat{p}^{E}(T)=\widehat{q}^{E}(T)-1=\frac{H(T)}{H(\bar{T})}-1=\frac{H(T)-H(\bar{T})}{H(\bar{T})} \tag{27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $H(T)-H(\bar{T})$ is divisible by $T-\bar{T}$, and $T-\bar{T}$ is divisible by $[2]_{E}(T)$, the right hand side of $(27)$ is divisible by $[2]_{E}(T)$ (see also the argument in §5.1). For the ordinary cohomology theory, we have $\widehat{q}_{k}^{H}=Q_{k}(k=1,2, \ldots)$, and therefore $\widehat{p}_{k}^{H}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ are the usual Schur $P$-functions $P_{k}(k=1,2, \ldots)$. In general, we have

$$
\widehat{p}_{k}^{E}=P_{k}+\text { lower terms in } \mathbf{y}=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots\right)
$$

Example 3.6. By the same calculation as in Example 2.7, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widehat{p}_{1}^{E} & =h_{1}=P_{1} \\
\widehat{p}_{2}^{E} & =h_{1}^{2}-a_{1,1} h_{1}=P_{2}-a_{1,1} h_{1} \\
\widehat{p}_{3}^{E} & =\left(h_{3}-h_{2} h_{1}+h_{1}^{3}\right)+a_{1,1} h_{2}-2 a_{1,1} h_{1}^{2}+\left(a_{1,1}^{2}-a_{1,2}\right) h_{1} \\
& =P_{3}+a_{1,1} h_{2}-2 a_{1,1} h_{1}^{2}+\left(a_{1,1}^{2}-a_{1,2}\right) h_{1}
\end{aligned}
$$

By the definition (25), the following relation holds:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(1+[2]_{E}(T) \widehat{p}^{E}(T)\right)\left(1+[2]_{E}(\bar{T}) \widehat{p}^{E}(\bar{T})\right)=\widehat{q}^{E}(T) \widehat{q}^{E}(\bar{T})=1 \tag{28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using the same argument as in $\S 2.3$, with the above relation (28), we can eliminate $\hat{p}_{2 i}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots)$.

Definition 3.7 (Ring of E-homology Schur P-functions). Define $\Gamma^{\prime E}$ to be the subalgebra of $\Lambda_{*}^{E}$ generated by $\widehat{p}_{1}^{E}, \widehat{p}_{2}^{E}, \ldots$. More explicitly, we define

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Gamma_{*}^{\prime E} & =E_{*}\left[\hat{p}_{1}^{E}, \widehat{p}_{2}^{E}, \ldots, \widehat{p}_{i}^{E}, \ldots\right] /\left(\left(1+[2]_{E}(T) \widehat{p}^{E}(T)\right)\left(1+[2]_{E}(\bar{T}) \widehat{p}^{E}(\bar{T})\right)=1\right) \\
& =E_{*}\left[\hat{p}_{1}^{E}, \widehat{p}_{3}^{E}, \ldots, \widehat{p}_{2 i-1}^{E}, \ldots\right] \longleftrightarrow \Lambda_{*}^{E}
\end{aligned}
$$

The coalgebra structures of $\Gamma_{*}^{E}$ and $\Gamma^{\prime}{ }_{*}^{E}$ are defined by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi\left(\widehat{q}_{k}^{E}\right)= & \sum_{i+j=k} \widehat{q}_{i}^{E} \otimes \widehat{q}_{j}^{E} \quad(k \geq 1), \\
\phi\left(\widehat{p}_{1}^{E}\right)= & \widehat{p}_{1}^{E} \otimes 1+1 \otimes \widehat{p}_{1}^{E}, \\
\phi\left(\widehat{p}_{l}^{E}\right)= & \widehat{p}_{l}^{E} \otimes 1+1 \otimes \widehat{p}_{l}^{E}+\sum_{\substack{i+j+k=l, i, j \geq 1}} \alpha_{k+1}^{E} \widehat{p}_{i}^{E} \otimes \widehat{p}_{j}^{E} \\
= & \widehat{p}_{l}^{E} \otimes 1+1 \otimes \widehat{p}_{l}^{E}+2 \sum_{\substack{i+j=l, i, j \geq 1}} \widehat{p}_{i}^{E} \otimes \widehat{p}_{j}^{E}+\alpha_{2}^{E} \sum_{\substack{i+j=l-1, i, j \geq 1}} \widehat{p}_{i}^{E} \otimes \widehat{p}_{j}^{E} \\
& +\cdots+\alpha_{l-1}^{E} \widehat{p}_{1}^{E} \otimes \widehat{p}_{1}^{E} \quad(l \geq 2) .
\end{aligned}
$$

These colagebra structures make $\Gamma_{*}^{E}$ and $\Gamma_{*}^{\prime E}$ into Hopf algebras over $E_{*}$.

### 3.3. Rings of $E$-cohomology Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions

Motivated by the description of $E^{*}(\Omega S p)$ and $E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ in the previous two subsections $\S 2.5$ and 2.6 , we define the $E$-cohomology analogues of the rings of Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions. In order to do so, let $\bar{e}_{i}:=e_{i}\left(\bar{x}_{1}, \bar{x}_{2}, \ldots\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\bar{h}_{i}:=h_{i}\left(\bar{x}_{1}, \bar{x}_{2}, \ldots\right)\right)$ be the $i$-th elementary symmetric function (resp. the $i$-th complete symmetric function) in the variables $\bar{x}_{1}, \bar{x}_{2}, \ldots$. Namely their generating functions are given by
$\bar{E}(T)=\sum_{i \geq 0} \bar{e}_{i} T^{i}=\prod_{i \geq 1}\left(1+\bar{x}_{i} T\right) \quad$ and $\quad \bar{H}(T)=\sum_{i \geq 0} \bar{h}_{i} T^{i}=\prod_{i \geq 1} \frac{1}{1-\bar{x}_{i} T}$.
Note that the relation $\bar{H}(T) \bar{E}(-T)=1$ holds. Then we make the following definition:

Definition 3.8. We define $\tilde{q}_{k}^{E}=\tilde{q}_{k}^{E}(\mathbf{x}) \in \Lambda_{E}^{*}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ as the coefficients of the generating function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{q}^{E}(T)=\sum_{k \geq 0} \tilde{q}_{k}^{E} T^{k}=\frac{E(T)}{\bar{E}(T)}=\prod_{i \geq 1} \frac{1+x_{i} T}{1+\bar{x}_{i} T} \in \Lambda_{E}^{*}[[T]] \tag{29}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\left(\tilde{q}_{0}^{E}:=1\right)$.
For $E=H$, the ordinary cohomology theory, we have $\bar{x}_{i}=-x_{i}$, and hence $\tilde{q}_{k}^{H}(k=1,2, \ldots)$ coincide with the usual Schur $Q$-functions $Q_{k}=$ $\sum_{i+j=k} h_{i} e_{j}(k=1,2, \ldots)$. By definition,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{q}^{E}(T)=\bar{H}(-T) E(T) & =\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \bar{h}_{i}(-T)^{i}\right)\left(\sum_{j \geq 0} e_{j} T^{j}\right) \\
& =\sum_{k \geq 0}\left(\sum_{i+j=k}(-1)^{i} \bar{h}_{i} e_{j}\right) T^{k},
\end{aligned}
$$

and we have $\tilde{q}_{k}^{E}=\sum_{i+j=k}(-1)^{i} \bar{h}_{i} e_{j}$. Since $\bar{x}_{i}=-x_{i}+$ higher terms in $x_{i}$, we have $\bar{h}_{i}=(-1)^{i} h_{i}+$ higher terms, and hence we have

$$
\tilde{q}_{k}^{E}=Q_{k}+\text { higher terms in } \mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\right)
$$

We also define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\overline{\tilde{q}^{E}}(T)=\sum_{k \geq 0} \overline{\tilde{q}_{k}^{E}} T^{k}=\frac{\bar{E}(T)}{E(T)}=\prod_{i \geq 1} \frac{1+\bar{x}_{i} T}{1+x_{i} T} \tag{30}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\left(\overline{\tilde{q}_{0}^{E}}:=1\right)$. By Definition 3.8, the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{q}^{E}(T) \overline{\tilde{q}^{E}}(T)=\frac{E(T)}{\bar{E}(T)} \cdot \frac{\bar{E}(T)}{E(T)}=1 \tag{31}
\end{equation*}
$$

holds.
Definition 3.9 (Ring of $E$-cohomology Schur $Q$-functions). Define the subalgebra $\Gamma_{E}^{*}$ of $\Lambda_{E}^{*}$ by

$$
\Gamma_{E}^{*}=E^{*}\left[\left[\tilde{q}_{1}^{E}, \tilde{q}_{2}^{E}, \ldots, \tilde{q}_{i}^{E}, \ldots\right]\right] /\left(\tilde{q}^{E}(T) \overline{\tilde{q}^{E}}(T)=1\right) \longleftrightarrow \Lambda_{E}^{*} .
$$

For $E=H$, the ordinary cohomology theory, $\tilde{q}_{i}^{H}=Q_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$, and hence $\Gamma_{H}^{*}=\Gamma$ is the ring of Schur $Q$-functions. The coalgebra structure of $\Gamma_{E}^{*}$ is defined by

$$
\phi\left(\tilde{q}_{k}^{E}\right)=\sum_{i+j=k} \tilde{q}_{i}^{E} \otimes \tilde{q}_{j}^{E}
$$

This makes $\Gamma_{E}^{*}$ into a Hopf algebra over $E^{*}$.
As we saw in subsection $\S 2.6$, we do not have a good grasp of $E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \cong \operatorname{Hom}_{E_{*}}\left(E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right), E_{*}\right)$. So we merely make the following definition.

Definition 3.10 (Ring of $E$-cohomology Schur $P$-functions). Define $\Gamma_{E}^{\prime *}$ to be the graded dual of $\Gamma_{*}^{E}$ over $E_{*}$, namely $\Gamma_{E}^{\prime *}=\operatorname{Hom}_{E_{*}}\left(\Gamma_{*}^{E}\right.$, $\left.E_{*}\right)$.
$\Gamma_{E}^{\prime *}$ has also a Hopf algebra structure over $E^{*}$ as a graded dual of the Hopf algebra $\Gamma_{*}^{E}$ over $E_{*}$.

### 3.4. Identifications with symmetric functions

In topology, it is well-known that the ordinary homology and cohomology of $B U$ can be identified with the ring of symmetric functions $\Lambda$. This identification can be generalized obviously in generalized (co)homology theory $E^{*}(-)$ and $E_{*}(-)$. In the previous subsection, we defined

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Lambda_{*}^{E}=E_{*} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \Lambda \quad(\text { extension of coefficients) } \\
& \Lambda_{E}^{*}=\operatorname{Hom}_{E_{*}}\left(\Lambda_{*}^{E}, E_{*}\right) \quad\left(\text { graded dual of } \Lambda_{*}^{E}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Then by Theorem 2.2, we have the following identifications of Hopf algebras:

$$
\begin{align*}
E_{*}(\Omega S U)=E_{*}\left[\beta_{1}^{E}, \beta_{2}^{E}, \ldots\right] & \xrightarrow{\sim} \Lambda_{*}^{E}=E_{*}\left[h_{1}, h_{2}, \ldots\right], \\
\beta_{i}^{E} & \longmapsto h_{i} \\
E^{*}(\Omega S U)=E^{*}\left[\left[c_{1}^{E}, c_{2}^{E}, \ldots\right]\right] & \xrightarrow{\sim} \Lambda_{E}^{*}=E^{*}\left[\left[e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots\right]\right],  \tag{32}\\
c_{i}^{E} & \longmapsto e_{i} .
\end{align*}
$$

Under these identifications together with Lemmas 2.3, 2.11 (2), 2.16 (2), and 2.20, we can realize $E_{*}(\Omega S p), E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right), E^{*}(\Omega S p)$, and $E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ as algebras of certain symmetric functions. By Theorems 2.13 and 2.8, we have the following:

Proposition 3.11. There is a natural identification of Hopf algebras over $E_{*}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
& E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)=\frac{E_{*}\left[\tau_{1}^{E}, \tau_{2}^{E}, \ldots\right]}{\left(\tau^{E}(T) \tau^{E}(\bar{T})=1\right)} \stackrel{\sim}{ } \Gamma_{*}^{E}=\frac{E_{*}\left[\widehat{q}_{1}^{E}, \widehat{q}_{2}^{E}, \ldots\right]}{\left(\widehat{q}^{E}(T) \widehat{q}^{E}(\bar{T})=1\right)}, \\
& \tau_{i}^{E} \longmapsto \widehat{q}_{i}^{E} . \\
& E_{*}(\Omega S p)=E_{*}\left[\eta_{1}^{E}, \eta_{3}^{E}, \ldots\right] \sim \\
& \eta_{2 i-1}^{E} \longmapsto \Gamma_{*}^{E}=E_{*}\left[\widehat{p}_{1}^{E}, \widehat{p}_{3}^{E}, \ldots\right], \\
& \widehat{p}_{2 i-1}^{E} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Furthermore,
(1) the surjective homomorphism

$$
(\Omega r)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right), \quad \beta_{i}^{E} \longmapsto \tau_{i}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots)
$$

is identified with the surjection

$$
\Lambda_{*}^{E} \longrightarrow \Gamma_{*}^{E}, \quad h_{i} \longmapsto \widehat{q}_{i}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots),
$$

(2) the injective homomorphism $(\Omega c)_{*}: E_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \longleftrightarrow E_{*}(\Omega S U)$ is identified with the natural inclusion $\Gamma_{*}^{E} \hookrightarrow \Lambda_{*}^{E}$,
(3) the homomorphism

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (\Omega q)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow E_{*}(\Omega S p), \\
& \beta_{i}^{E} \longmapsto 2 \eta_{i}^{E}+\alpha_{2}^{E} \eta_{i-1}^{E}+\cdots+\alpha_{i}^{E} \eta_{1}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots)
\end{aligned}
$$

is identified with the homomorphism
$\Lambda_{*}^{E} \longrightarrow \Gamma^{\prime}{ }_{*}^{E}, h_{i} \longmapsto 2 \widehat{p}_{i}^{E}+\alpha_{2}^{E} \widehat{p}_{i-1}^{E}+\cdots+\alpha_{i}^{E} \widehat{p}_{1}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots)$,
(4) the injective homomorphism $(\Omega c)_{*}: E_{*}(\Omega S p) \longleftrightarrow E_{*}(\Omega S U)$ is identified with the natural inclusion $\Gamma_{*}^{\prime E} \longleftrightarrow \Lambda_{*}^{E}$.

Dually from Theorem 2.18 and the argument in subsection $\S 2.6$, we have the following:

Proposition 3.12. There is a natural identification of Hopf algebras over $E^{*}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
E^{*}(\Omega S p)=\frac{E^{*}\left[\left[\mu_{1}^{E}, \mu_{2}^{E}, \ldots\right]\right]}{\left(\mu^{E}(T) \overline{\mu^{E}}(T)=1\right)} & \xrightarrow{\sim} \Gamma_{E}^{*}=\frac{E^{*}\left[\left[\tilde{q}_{1}^{E}, \tilde{q}_{2}^{E}, \ldots\right]\right]}{\left(\tilde{q}^{E}(T) \overline{\tilde{q}}^{E}(T)=1\right)}, \\
\mu_{i}^{E} & \longmapsto \tilde{q}_{i}^{E} . \\
E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) & \xrightarrow{\sim} \Gamma_{E}^{\prime *} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Furthermore,
(1) the surjective homomorphism

$$
(\Omega c)^{*}: E^{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow E^{*}(\Omega S p), \quad c_{i}^{E} \longmapsto \mu_{i}^{E} \quad(i=1,2, \ldots)
$$

is identified with the surjection

$$
\Lambda_{E}^{*} \longrightarrow \Gamma_{E}^{*}, \quad e_{i} \longmapsto \tilde{q}_{i}^{E}(i=1,2, \ldots),
$$

(2) the injective homomorphism $(\Omega q)^{*}: E^{*}(\Omega S p) \longleftrightarrow E^{*}(\Omega S U)$ is identified with the natural inclusion $\Gamma_{E}^{*} \longleftrightarrow \Lambda_{E}^{*}$,
(3) the injective homomorphism $(\Omega r)^{*}: E^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) \longleftrightarrow E^{*}(\Omega S U)$ is identified with the natural inclusion $\Gamma_{E}^{\prime *} \longleftrightarrow \Lambda_{E}^{*}$.

Remark 3.13. For $E=H$, the ordinary (co)homology theory so that $\Lambda_{*}^{H}=\Lambda_{H}^{*}=\Lambda$ and $\Gamma_{*}^{H}=\Gamma_{H}^{*}=\Gamma$, the homomorphisms
$(\Omega r)_{*}: H_{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow H_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right), \quad \beta_{i} \longmapsto \tau_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$,
$(\Omega c)^{*}: H^{*}(\Omega S U) \longrightarrow H^{*}(\Omega S p), \quad c_{i} \longmapsto \mu_{i}(i=1,2, \ldots)$
give a geometric interpretation of the ring homomorphism $\varphi: \Lambda \longrightarrow$ $\Gamma, \varphi\left(e_{n}\right)=Q_{n}(n \geq 1)($ Macdonald [46, III, §8, Examples 10]).

## §4. Universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions

In the previous section, we have constructed certain subalgebras $\Gamma_{*}^{E}, \Gamma^{\prime}{ }_{*}^{E}$ of $\Lambda_{*}^{E}$ and $\Gamma_{E}^{*}, \Gamma_{E}^{\prime *}$ of $\Lambda_{E}^{*}$. Our next task is to construct certain symmetric functions which may serve as nice bases for these algebras as free $E_{*}$ (or $E^{*}$ )-modules. As mentioned in the introduction (see also Example 2.1), Quillen showed that the complex cobordism theory $M U^{*}(-)$ (with the associated formal group law $\mu_{M U}$ ) has the following universal property: for any complex oriented cohomology theory $E^{*}(-)$ (with the associated formal group law $\mu_{E}$ ), there exists a homomorphism of rings $\theta: M U^{*} \longrightarrow E^{*}$ such that $\mu_{E}(X, Y)=\left(\theta_{*} \mu_{M U}\right)(X, Y)=$ $X+Y+\sum_{i, j \geq 1} \theta\left(a_{i, j}^{M U}\right) X^{i} Y^{j}$. Thus it will be sufficient to consider the case when $E=M U$, for general case follows immediately from the universal one by the specialization $a_{i, j}^{M U} \longmapsto \theta\left(a_{i, j}^{M U}\right)(i, j \geq 1)$. Recall that, by Quillen again, the coefficient ring $M U_{*}=M U^{-*}$ is isomorphic to the Lazard ring $\mathbb{L}$. In this section, we shall construct the "universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions" $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}), Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ for $\lambda$ strict partitions. Then we shall see at the end of Section 5 that these functions constitute required bases for $\Gamma^{\prime *}{ }_{M U}, \Gamma_{M U}^{*}($ when $\mathbf{b}=0)$. Since the functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ 's and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ 's will be of independent interest in terms of, e.g., algebraic combinatorics, so apart from geometry, we shall deal with the above problem purely algebraically in this section.

### 4.1. Lazard ring $\mathbb{L}$ and the universal formal group law

We begin with collecting the basic facts about the Lazard ring (in Sections 4 and 5, we use the convention as in Levine-Morel's book [43]). In [42], Lazard considered a universal commutative formal group law of rank one $\left(\mathbb{L}, F_{\mathbb{L}}\right)$, where the ring $\mathbb{L}$, called the Lazard ring, is isomorphic to the polynomial ring in countably infinite number of variables with integer coefficients, and $F_{\mathbb{L}}=F_{\mathbb{L}}(u, v)$ is the universal formal group
law (for a construction and basic properties of $\mathbb{L}$, see Levine-Morel [43, §1.1]):

$$
F_{\mathbb{L}}(u, v)=u+v+\sum_{i, j \geq 1} a_{i, j} u^{i} v^{j} \in \mathbb{L}[[u, v]] .
$$

This is a formal power series in $u, v$ with coefficients $a_{i, j}$ of formal variables which satisfies the axiom of the formal group law (see §2.1). For the universal formal group law, we shall use the notation (see LevineMorel [43, §2.3.2])

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
a+_{F} b=F_{\mathbb{L}}(a, b) & (\text { formal sum }) \\
\bar{a}=\chi_{\mathbb{L}}(a) & (\text { formal inverse of } a) .
\end{array}
$$

Note that $\bar{a} \in \mathbb{L}[[a]]$ is a formal power series in $a$ with initial term $-a$, and first few terms appear in Levine-Morel [43, p.41] (see also (3)). In what follows, we regard $\mathbb{L}$ as a graded algebra over $\mathbb{Z}$, and the grading of $\mathbb{L}$ is given as follows (see Levine-Morel [43, p.5]): The homological (resp. cohomological) degree of $a_{i, j}(i, j \geq 1)$ is defined by $\operatorname{deg}_{h}\left(a_{i, j}\right)=i+j-1$ (resp. $\operatorname{deg}^{h}\left(a_{i, j}\right)=1-i-j$ ). We will indicate which grading of $\mathbb{L}$ we choose in each time, and sometimes we use the notation $\mathbb{L}^{*}$ or $\mathbb{L}_{*}$ to avoid confusion. Be aware that in topology, it is customary to give $a_{i, j}$ the homological degree $2(i+j-1)$ or the cohomological degree $2(1-i-j)$ (see Section 1).

### 4.2. Definition of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$

The factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions were first introduced by Ivanov [27, Definitions 2.10 and 2.13] (for their definition, see also Ikeda-Mihalcea-Naruse $[24, \S 4.2]$ ), and it turns out that these functions represent the Schubert classes of the torus equivariant cohomology rings of Lagrangian or orthogonal Grassmannians (see a series of works due to Ikeda [22, Theorem 6.2], Ikeda-Naruse [23, Theorem 8.7]). Furthermore, in [25, Definition 2.1], they introduced the $K$-theoretic analogue of the factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions. They showed that these functions also represent the Schubert classes of the torus equivariant $K$-theory of the above homogeneous spaces.

In this subsection, we shall generalize their definition to the case of complex cobordism cohomology theory. Besides the variables $\mathbf{x}=$ $\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\right)$, we prepare another set of variables $\mathbf{b}=\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots\right)$. We provide the variables $\mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\right)$ and $\mathbf{b}=\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots\right)$ with degree $\operatorname{deg}\left(x_{i}\right)=\operatorname{deg}\left(b_{i}\right)=1$ for $i=1,2, \ldots$, and we use $\operatorname{deg}^{h}\left(a_{i, j}\right)=1-i-$ $j(i, j \geq 1)$. Following $\S 3.2,3.4$, we introduce the rings of symmetric
functions

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) & :=\mathbb{L}_{*} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \Lambda(\mathbf{x}) \\
\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) & :=\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}_{*}}\left(\Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}), \mathbb{L}_{*}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By definition, we have $\Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \cong \Lambda_{*}^{M U}$ and $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \cong \Lambda_{M U}^{*}$, and we know that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) & \cong \mathbb{L}_{*}\left[h_{1}(\mathbf{x}), h_{2}(\mathbf{x}), \ldots\right]\left(\cong M U_{*}(\Omega S U)\right) \\
\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) & \cong \mathbb{L}^{*}\left[\left[e_{1}(\mathbf{x}), e_{2}(\mathbf{x}), \ldots\right]\right]\left(\cong M U^{*}(\Omega S U)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Moreover we put

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}) & :=\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}), \\
\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}) & :=\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]=\mathbb{L}\left[\left[b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots\right]\right]$ is a formal power series ring in the variables $b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots$. In this section, we also consider the ring of symmetric formal power series of finite variables $\mathbf{x}_{n}=\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}$ (or $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ ), and use the notation
$\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right):=\mathbb{L}^{*}\left[\left[e_{1}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right), \ldots, e_{n}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)\right]\right] \quad$ and $\quad \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right):=\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$.
In what follows, when considering polynomials or formal power series $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\right)$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}$ (or $\left.\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right)$, we shall call the degree with respect to $x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots$, and $a_{i, j}(i, j \geq 1)$ the total degree of $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\right)$.

For an integer $k \geq 1$, we define a generalization of the ordinary $k$-th power $t^{k}$ by

$$
[t \mid \mathbf{b}]^{k}:=\prod_{i=1}^{k}\left(t+_{F} b_{i}\right)=\left(t+_{F} b_{1}\right)\left(t+_{F} b_{2}\right) \cdots\left(t+_{F} b_{k}\right)
$$

and its variant by

$$
[[t \mid \mathbf{b}]]^{k}:=\left(t+_{F} t\right)[t \mid \mathbf{b}]^{k-1}=\left(t+_{F} t\right)\left(t+_{F} b_{1}\right)\left(t+_{F} b_{2}\right) \cdots\left(t+_{F} b_{k-1}\right)
$$

where we set $[t \mid \mathbf{b}]^{0}=[[t \mid \mathbf{b}]]^{0}:=1$. For a partition, i.e., a non-increasing sequence of non-negative integers $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{r}\right)\left(\lambda_{1} \geq \lambda_{2} \geq \cdots \geq\right.$ $\lambda_{r} \geq 0$ ), we set

$$
[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]^{\lambda}:=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left[x_{i} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{i}} \quad \text { and } \quad[[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]]^{\lambda}:=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left[\left[x_{i} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]\right]^{\lambda_{i}} .
$$

Let $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{r}\right)$ be a strict partition of length $\ell(\lambda)=r$, i.e., a sequence of positive integers such that $\lambda_{1}>\cdots>\lambda_{r}>0$. We denote by
$\mathcal{S P}$ the set of all strict partitions, and $\mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}$ the subset of $\mathcal{S P}$ consisting of strict partitions of length $r \leq n$. The following Hall-Littlewood type definition with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ was suggested to us by Anatol Kirillov (cf. Kirillov-Naruse [29]), and we thank him for this.

Definition 4.1 (Universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions). For a strict partition $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{r}\right)$ with length $\ell(\lambda)=r \leq n$, we define

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)  \tag{33}\\
& :=\frac{1}{(n-r)!} \sum_{w \in S_{n}} w\left[[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]^{\lambda} \prod_{i=1}^{r} \prod_{j=i+1}^{n} \frac{x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}}{x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}}\right] \\
Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \\
& :=\frac{1}{(n-r)!} \sum_{w \in S_{n}} w\left[[[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]]^{\lambda} \prod_{i=1}^{r} \prod_{j=i+1}^{n} \frac{x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}}{x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}}\right],
\end{align*}
$$

where the symmetric group $S_{n}$ acts only on the $x$-variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ by permutations. If $\ell(\lambda)=r>n$, we set $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=0$.
Since
$x_{i}+{ }_{F} \bar{x}_{j}$
$=\left(x_{i}-x_{j}\right)\left(1+\right.$ higher degree terms in $x_{i}$ and $x_{j}$ with coefficients in $\left.\mathbb{L}\right)$,
$P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ are well defined elements of $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$, namely these are symmetric formal power series with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ in the variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ and formal power series in $b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots, b_{\lambda_{1}}$ for $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$ (resp. $b_{1}, b_{2} \ldots, b_{\lambda_{1}-1}$ for $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$ ). Notice that these are homogeneous formal power series of total degree $|\lambda|=\sum_{i=1}^{r} \lambda_{i}$, the size of $\lambda$. We call these formal power series the universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$ - functions. In Definition 4.1, if we put $a_{i, j}=0$ for all $i, j \geq 1$, the functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ reduce to the usual factorial Schur $P$ and $Q$-polynomials $P_{\lambda}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), Q_{\lambda}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$. If we put $a_{1,1}=\beta, a_{i, j}=0$ for all $(i, j) \neq(1,1)$, then $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ reduce to the $K$-theoretic factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-polynomials $G P_{\lambda}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), G Q_{\lambda}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ due to Ikeda-Naruse. Thus our functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ are a generalization of these polynomials and hence universal in this sense.

## Example 4.2.

(1) For $n=1$ and $\lambda=(1)$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
P_{(1)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =\left[x_{1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]=x_{1}+_{F} b_{1}=x_{1}+b_{1}+a_{1,1} x_{1} b_{1}+\cdots, \\
Q_{(1)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =\left[\left[x_{1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]\right]=x_{1}+{ }_{F} x_{1}=2 x_{1}+a_{1,1} x_{1}^{2}+\cdots .
\end{aligned}
$$

(2) For $n=2$ and $\lambda=(1)=(1,0)$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
P_{(1)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, x_{2} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =\left(x_{1}+_{F} x_{2}\right)\left(\frac{x_{1}+_{F} b_{1}}{x_{1}+_{F} \bar{x}_{2}}+\frac{x_{2}+_{F} b_{1}}{x_{2}+_{F} \bar{x}_{1}}\right), \\
Q_{(1)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, x_{2} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =\left(x_{1}+_{F} x_{2}\right)\left(\frac{x_{1}+_{F} x_{1}}{x_{1}+_{F} \bar{x}_{2}}+\frac{x_{2}+_{F} x_{2}}{x_{2}+_{F} \bar{x}_{1}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We also set

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)=P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right):=P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid 0\right), \\
& Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)=Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right):=Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid 0\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

These are homogeneous symmetric formal power series in $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ of total degree $|\lambda|$. By definition, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) & =P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)+g_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right), \\
Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) & =Q_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)+h_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ and $Q_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ are the usual Schur $P$ - and $Q$-polynomials, and $g_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ and $h_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ are formal power series with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}$ in $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ whose degrees with respect to $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ are strictly greater than $|\lambda|$. From this, we see that $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots\right.$, $x_{n}$ )'s (resp. $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ 's), $\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$, are linearly independent over $\mathbb{L}$. For suppose that there exists a homogeneous relation of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{A}} c_{\lambda} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=0 \tag{34}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $c_{\lambda} \in \mathbb{L}, \operatorname{deg}\left(c_{\lambda}\right)+|\lambda|=N>0$, and the summation ranges over a certain subset $\mathcal{A} \subset \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$. Since $\operatorname{deg}\left(c_{\lambda}\right) \leq 0$ by our convention of the grading of $\mathbb{L}=\mathbb{L}^{*}$, we have $|\lambda| \geq N$ for all $\lambda$ that appear in the above relation (34). Let $N_{0} \geq N$ be the minimum of the size $|\lambda|$ for all $\lambda \in \mathcal{A}$, and $\mathcal{A}_{0}:=\left\{\lambda \in \mathcal{A}| | \lambda \mid=N_{0}\right\} \subset \mathcal{A}$. Then we have from (34), $\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{A}_{0}} c_{\lambda} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=0$. Thus we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 & =\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{A}_{0}} c_{\lambda} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{A}_{0}} c_{\lambda}\left(P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)+g_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\right) \\
& =\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{A}_{0}} c_{\lambda} P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)+\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{A}_{0}} c_{\lambda} g_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Considering the degrees with respect to $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$, we have $\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{A}_{0}} c_{\lambda} P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=0$. On the other hand, it is known that
$P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ 's, $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P} \mathcal{P}_{n}$, form a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis for the ring $\Gamma\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ of supersymmetric polynomials in $n$ variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ (see Pragacz [55, Theorem 2.11], Ivanov [27, Proposition 2.12]). Therefore they form an $\mathbb{L}$-basis for the ring $\mathbb{L} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \Gamma\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$. In particular, they are linearly independent over $\mathbb{L}$, and hence we conclude that $c_{\lambda}=0$ for all $\lambda \in \mathcal{A}_{0}$. Next we consider the minimum $N_{1}$ of the size of $|\lambda|$ for all $\lambda \in \mathcal{A} \backslash \mathcal{A}_{0}$, and repeat the above argument. In this way, we conclude that $c_{\lambda}=0$ for all $\lambda \in \mathcal{A}$.

Similarly, by definition, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)+g_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), \\
Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =Q_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)+h_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ and $Q_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ are the usual factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-polynomials, and $g_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ and $h_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ are formal power series in $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}, b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots$ whose degrees with respect to $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}, b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots$ are strictly greater than $|\lambda|$. The verification of linear independence of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ 's (resp. $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ 's), $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}_{n}$, over $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ will be deferred until we show the "vanishing property" of these functions in §4.8.

## 4.3. $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric series

In this subsection, we introduce the notion of the " $L$-supersymmetricity" which is a generalization of the " $Q$-cancellation property" due to Pragacz [55, p.145], "supersymmetricity" due to Ivanov [27, Definition 2.1], and " $K$-supersymmetric property ( $K$-theoretic $Q$-cancellation property)" due to Ikeda-Naruse [25, Definition 1.1]. $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric formal series is defined as follows.

Definition 4.3 ( $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric series). A formal power series $f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ in the variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}$ is called $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric if
(1) $f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ is symmetric in the variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$, and
(2) $f\left(t, \bar{t}, x_{3}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ does not depend on $t$, or in other words, $f\left(t, \bar{t}, x_{3}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=f\left(0,0, x_{3}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ holds.

For example, the formal power series $x_{1}+_{F} x_{2}+_{F} \cdots+_{F} x_{n}$ is
 property form a subring of $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$, and we denote it by $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$. Hereafter we shall call $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ the ring of $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric functions in the $n$ variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$. We also define $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ to be the subring of $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ consisting of $f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \in \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ such that $f\left(t, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)-$
$f\left(0, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ is divisible by $t+_{F} t$. We also define

$$
\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right):=\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \quad \text { and } \quad \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right):=\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) .
$$

## Proposition 4.4.

(1) For $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}, P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ are in $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$. Moreover $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ is an element of $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$.
(2) For $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}_{n}, P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ is in $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$, whereas $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ is in $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$.

We can prove this proposition along the same lines as in Ikeda-Naruse [25, Propositions 3.1, 3.2]. However we shall give a proof for convenience of the reader. Before proving this proposition, we prepare two simple lemmas.

Lemma 4.5. Let $f(x, y) \in \mathbb{L}[[x, y]]$ be a formal power series. Suppose that $f(\bar{y}, y)=0$. Then $f(x, y)$ is divisible by $x+_{F} y$.

Proof. By the assumption, $f(x, y)$ is divisible by $x-\bar{y}$. On the other hand, we see that $x+_{F} y=(x-\bar{y}) \times u(x, y)$ with $u(x, y) \in \mathbb{L}[[x, y]]$, a unit. From this the claim follows.
Q.E.D.

Lemma 4.6. Let $r \leq n$, and $f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{r}\right)$ be a formal power series in $\mathbb{L}\left[\left[x_{1}, \ldots, x_{r}\right]\right]$. Then the following function is $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric.

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=\sum_{w \in S_{n}} w\left[f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{r}\right) \prod_{i=1}^{r} \prod_{j=i+1}^{n} \frac{x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}}{x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}}\right] \tag{35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore if $f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{r}\right)$ is divisible by $\prod_{i=1}^{r} x_{i}=x_{1} \cdots x_{r}$, then $R_{n}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ has the stability in the following sense:

$$
R_{n+1}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}, 0\right)=(n+1-r) R_{n}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)
$$

Proof. By the definition, $R_{n}\left(x_{1}, \ldots x_{n}\right)$ is a symmetric formal power series. We shall show that this formal power series has $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric property. Let $x_{p}=t, x_{q}=\bar{t}$ for arbitrary integers $p, q$ such that $1 \leq p<q \leq n$. We claim that each summand corresponding to $w \in S_{n}$ does not depend on $t$. For convenience we put $F_{n}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=$ $\prod_{i=1}^{r} \prod_{j=i+1}^{n} \frac{x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}}{x_{i}+{ }_{F} \bar{x}_{j}}$. If one of $p, q$ is in $\{w(1), \ldots, w(r)\}$, then we see directly that the term

$$
F_{n}\left(x_{w(1)}, \ldots, x_{w(n)}\right)=\prod_{i=1}^{r} \prod_{j=i+1}^{n} \frac{x_{w(i)}+_{F} x_{w(j)}}{x_{w(i)}+_{F} \bar{x}_{w(j)}}
$$

vanishes because of $t+_{F} \bar{t}=0$. If $p, q \in\{w(r+1), \ldots, w(n)\}$, then the term

$$
F_{n}\left(x_{w(1)}, \ldots, x_{w(n)}\right)=\prod_{i=1}^{r} \frac{x_{w(i)}+_{F} x_{w(i+1)}}{x_{w(i)}+_{F} \bar{x}_{w(i+1)}} \times \cdots \times \frac{x_{w(i)}+_{F} x_{w(n)}}{x_{w(i)}+_{F} \bar{x}_{w(n)}}
$$

does not depend on $t$ because of the identity $\frac{x_{w(i)}+_{F} t}{x_{w(i)}+_{F} \bar{t}} \times \frac{x_{w(i)}+_{F} \bar{t}}{x_{w(i)}+_{F} t}=1$. Note that in this case $f\left(x_{w(1)}, \ldots, x_{w(r)}\right)$ does not depend on $t$. Thus the first assertion is proved.

For the second assertion, we argue as follows: In the defining equation of $R_{n+1}$, we divide the summation into two parts: one is the summation for $w \in S_{n+1}$ such that $n+1 \in\{w(1), \ldots, w(r)\}$, and the other is the summation for $w \in S_{n+1}$ such that $n+1 \in\{w(r+1), \ldots, w(n+$ $1)\}$. Let $R_{n+1}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n+1}\right)=\sum_{1}+\sum_{2}$ be such decomposition. If we set $x_{n+1}=0$, then each summand in $\sum_{1}$ becomes zero because $f\left(x_{w(1)}, \ldots, x_{w(r)}\right)=0$ by the assumption. Therefore we have only to consider the entries in $\sum_{2}$. If $n+1 \in\{w(r+1), \ldots, w(n+1)\}$, we have $n+1=w(k)$ for some $r+1 \leq k \leq n+1$. If $k=n+1$, namely $w(n+1)=n+1$, the element $w \in S_{n+1}$ naturally defines an element $w^{\prime} \in S_{n}$, i.e., $w^{\prime}(i)=w(i)(1 \leq i \leq n)$. Then we have $f\left(x_{w(1)}, \ldots, x_{w(r)}\right)=f\left(x_{w^{\prime}(1)}, \ldots, x_{w^{\prime}(r)}\right)$. If $r+1 \leq k \leq n$, we consider the permutation $(w(n+1) \quad n+1) w$. Since this permutation fixes $n+1$, it defines naturally an element $w^{\prime} \in S_{n}$, i.e., $w^{\prime}(i)=$ $w(i)(1 \leq i \leq n, i \neq k)$ and $w^{\prime}(k)=w(n+1)$. Then we also have $f\left(x_{w(1)}, \ldots, x_{w(r)}\right)=f\left(x_{w^{\prime}(1)}, \ldots, x_{w^{\prime}(r)}\right)$. In either case, we see directly that

$$
F_{n+1}\left(x_{w(1)}, \ldots, x_{w(n+1)}\right)=F_{n}\left(x_{w^{\prime}(1)}, \ldots, x_{w^{\prime}(n)}\right)
$$

when we put $x_{n+1}=0$. Therefore $\sum_{2}$ becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (n-r+1) \sum_{w^{\prime} \in S_{n}} f\left(x_{w^{\prime}(1)}, \ldots, x_{w^{\prime}(r)}\right) F_{n}\left(x_{w^{\prime}(1)}, \ldots, x_{w^{\prime}(n)}\right) \\
& =(n-r+1) R_{n}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

when we put $x_{n+1}=0$, and the second assertion is proved. Q.E.D.
Proof of Proposition 4.4. The assertion (2) follows immediately from (1). Let us prove (1). First assertion follows from Lemma 4.6 when we put $f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{r}\right)=[\mathbf{x} \mid 0]^{\lambda}=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left[x_{i} \mid 0\right]^{\lambda_{i}}=\prod_{i=1}^{r} x_{i}^{\lambda_{i}}$, or $[[\mathbf{x} \mid 0]]^{\lambda}=$ $\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left[\left[x_{i} \mid 0\right]\right]^{\lambda_{i}}=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left(x_{i}+{ }_{F} x_{i}\right) x_{i}^{\lambda_{i}-1}$.

For the second statement, we shall show that $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(t, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)-$ $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(0, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ is divisible by $t+_{F} t$. In the defining equation (33), we
divide the summation into two parts: one is the summation for $w \in S_{n}$ such that $1 \in\{w(1), \ldots, w(r)\}$, and the other is the summation for $w \in S_{n}$ such that $1 \in\{w(r+1), \ldots, w(n)\}$. Let $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(t, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)-$ $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(0, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=\sum_{1}+\sum_{2}$ be such decomposition. Since $\left[\left[x_{1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]\right]^{\lambda_{1}}=$ $\left(x_{1}+{ }_{F} x_{1}\right)\left[x_{1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{1}-1}$, we see easily that each summand in $\sum_{1}$ is divisible by $t+_{F} t$. Each summand in $\sum_{2}$ is also divisible by $t+_{F} t$ because the numerator of the following term

$$
\prod_{i=1}^{r} \frac{x_{w(i)}+{ }_{F} t}{x_{w(i)}+_{F} \bar{t}}-1=\prod_{i=1}^{r} \frac{\left(x_{w(i)}+{ }_{F} t\right)-\left(x_{w(i)}+{ }_{F} \bar{t}\right)}{x_{w(i)}+_{F} \bar{t}}
$$

is divisible by $t+_{F} t$ from Lemma 4.5. Therefore we have the required result.
Q.E.D.

### 4.4. Stability Property

In this subsection, we discuss the stability property of our functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$. First consider the formal power series $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$. They have the following stability property:

Proposition 4.7. Let $\lambda$ be a strict partition of length $r \leq n$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}, 0\right)=P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}\right),  \tag{1}\\
& Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}, 0\right)=Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}\right),
\end{align*}
$$

where the right-hand sides are zero if $r=n$.
Proof. First note that both $[\mathbf{x} \mid 0]^{\lambda}=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left[x_{i} \mid 0\right]^{\lambda_{i}}=\prod_{i=1}^{r} x_{i}^{\lambda_{i}}$ and $[[\mathbf{x} \mid 0]]^{\lambda}=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left[\left[x_{i} \mid 0\right]\right]^{\lambda_{i}}=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{i}\right) x_{i}^{\lambda_{i}-1}$ are divisible by $\prod_{i=1}^{r} x_{i}=x_{1} \cdots x_{r}$. Therefore the result follows from Lemma 4.6. Q.E.D.

For each positive integer $n$, let $\varphi_{n+1}: \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n+1}\right) \longrightarrow \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ be a homomorphism of graded $\mathbb{L}$-algebras given by the specialization $x_{n+1}=0$. Then $\left\{\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right), \varphi_{n}\right\}_{n=1,2, \ldots}$ form an inverse system of graded $\mathbb{L}$-algebras. Define the ring of $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric fucntions $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ to be the inverse limit of this system. Namely, we define

$$
\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}):=\lim _{{ }_{n}} \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) .
$$

For each strict partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$, by Proposition 4.7, the sequence $\left\{P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\right\}$ defines an element

$$
P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}):=\lim _{\underset{n}{ }} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \in \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) .
$$

Similarly we define

$$
\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}):=\underset{{ }_{n}}{\lim _{+}} \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right),
$$

which is a subring of $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$. Also for each strict partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$, the sequence $\left\{Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\right\}$ defines an element

$$
Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}):=\lim _{\overleftarrow{n}_{n}} Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \in \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) .
$$

Note that we have the following inclusion relations:

$$
\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \subset \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \subset \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)=\mathbb{L}\left[\left[e_{1}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right), \ldots, e_{n}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)\right]\right] .
$$

This implies that

$$
\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \subset \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \subset \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})=\mathbb{L}\left[\left[e_{1}(\mathbf{x}), e_{2}(\mathbf{x}), \ldots\right]\right] .
$$

From this, $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ inherit the Hopf algebra structure over $\mathbb{L}$ from $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})=\mathbb{L}\left[\left[e_{1}(\mathbf{x}), e_{2}(\mathbf{x}), \ldots\right]\right]$.

Next consider the stability property of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$. The homomorphisms of graded $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ algebras $\psi_{n+1}: \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n+1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \longrightarrow \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ given by the specialization $x_{n+1}=0$ define an inverse system $\left\{\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), \psi_{n}\right\}_{n=1,2, \ldots}$. Then we define

Similarly, we define

$$
\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}):=\lim _{{ }_{n}} \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\lim _{{ }_{n}} \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \cong \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) .
$$

In contrast to Proposition 4.7, the functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ have the following stability property:

Proposition 4.8. Let $\lambda$ be a strict partition of length $r \leq n$. Then
(1) $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, 0,0 \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$,
(2) $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}, 0 \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$,
where the right-hand sides are zero if $r=n$.
Proof. The proof of (1) goes along the same lines as in Ikeda-Naruse [23, Proposition 8.2] (see also Ikeda-Naruse [25, Remark 3.1]). The assertion (2) follows from Lemma 4.6 because $[[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]]^{\lambda}=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left[\left[x_{i} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]\right]^{\lambda_{i}}=$ $\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{i}\right)\left[x_{i} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{i}-1}$ is divisible by $\prod_{i=1}^{r} x_{i}=x_{1} \cdots x_{r} . \quad$ Q.E.D.

Following Ikeda-Naruse [23, Proposition 8.2], we call the above stability property (1) the stability mod 2.

Remark 4.9. Note that (see also Ikeda-Naruse [25, Remark 3.1]) the usual stability property $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}, 0 \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ does not hold in general. For from Example 4.2, we have $P_{(1)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=$ $x_{1}+_{F} b_{1}$, whereas $P_{(1)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, 0 \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=x_{1}+_{F} b_{1}+b_{1} \frac{x_{1}}{\bar{x}_{1}}$.
Therefore in the case of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$, there exist well-defined even and odd limit functions. In what follows, we shall use only the even limit functions. To be precise, for each strict partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$, we define the functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+} \in \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ by
$P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+}=P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+}:= \begin{cases}P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & \text { if } n \text { is even }, \\ P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}, 0 \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & \text { if } n \text { is odd. }\end{cases}$
By Proposition 4.8 (1), the sequence $\left\{P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+}\right\}$defines an element

Similarly, for each strict partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$, define

$$
Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}):=\lim _{\overleftarrow{n}_{n}} Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \in \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})
$$

This is a well defined element of $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$ because of Proposition 4.8 (2). Finally, note that we have the following inclusion relations:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \subset \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \subset \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \\
& =\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \mathbb{L}\left[\left[e_{1}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right), \ldots, e_{n}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)\right]\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies that

$$
\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}) \subset \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}) \subset \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}) \cong \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \mathbb{L}\left[\left[e_{1}(\mathbf{x}), e_{2}(\mathbf{x}), \ldots\right]\right] .
$$

### 4.5. Universal factorial Schur functions

4.5.1. Definition of $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ Let $\mathcal{P}_{n}$ denote the set of all partitions of length $\leq n$. For a positive integer $n$, we set $\rho_{n}=(n, n-1, \ldots, 2,1)$. The factorial Schur function $s_{\lambda}(x \mid a)$ (for its definition, see e.g., IkedaNaruse [23, §5.1], Macdonald [46, I, §3, Examples 20], Molev-Sagan [54, p.4431]) and the factorial Grothendieck polynomial $G_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid b\right)$ (for its definition, see Ikeda-Naruse [25, (2.13), (2.14)], McNamara [49, Definition 4.1]) can also be generalized in the universal setting. Here we
assign the variables $x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots$ degree $\operatorname{deg}\left(x_{i}\right)=\operatorname{deg}\left(b_{i}\right)=$ $1(i=1,2, \ldots)$, and use $\operatorname{deg}^{h}\left(a_{i, j}\right)=1-i-j(i, j \geq 1)$. For partitions $\lambda, \mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}, \lambda+\mu$ is a partition of length $\leq n$ defined by $(\lambda+\mu)_{i}:=$ $\lambda_{i}+\mu_{i}(1 \leq i \leq n)$.

Definition 4.10 (Universal factorial Schur functions). For a partition $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{n}\right) \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, we define the universal factorial Schur functions $s_{\lambda}^{\mathrm{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ to be

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right):=\sum_{w \in S_{n}} w\left[\frac{\left[\mathbf{x}|\mathbf{b}|^{\lambda+\rho_{n-1}}\right.}{\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}\right)}\right] . \tag{36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 4.11. The non-equivariant version, i.e., $\mathbf{b}=0$, of our functions are already defined by Fel'dman [17, Definition 4.2]. These are called the generalized Schur polynomials there. We thank the referee who pointed out this fact to us.
By the same reason for the universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions, $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ is a well-defined element of $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$, namely it is a symmetric formal power series with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ in the variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$. It is also a homogeneous formal power series of total degree $|\lambda|$. In Definition 4.10, if we put $a_{i, j}=0$ for all $i, j \geq 1$, the functions $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ reduce to the usual factorial Schur polynomials $s_{\lambda}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$. If we put $a_{1,1}=\beta, a_{i, j}=0$ for all $(i, j) \neq(1,1)$, then $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ reduce to the factorial Grothendieck polynomials $G_{\lambda}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$. Note that unlike the usual Schur polynomials, $s_{\emptyset}^{\mathbb{\emptyset}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \neq 1$. For instance,

$$
s_{\emptyset}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, x_{2} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\frac{x_{1}+_{F} b_{1}}{x_{1}+_{F} \bar{x}_{2}}+\frac{x_{2}+_{F} b_{1}}{x_{2}+_{F} \bar{x}_{1}}=1+a_{1,2} x_{1} x_{2}+a_{1,1} a_{1,2} b_{1} x_{1} x_{2}+\cdots .
$$

We also define

$$
s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)=s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right):=s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid 0\right) .
$$

It is a homogeneous symmetric formal power series in $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathrm{x}_{n}\right)$ of total degree $|\lambda|$. By definition, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=s_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)+g_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right), \tag{37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $s_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ is the usual Schur polynomial and $g_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ is a symmetric formal power series with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}$ in the variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ whose degree with respect to $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ is strictly higher than $|\lambda|$. From this, one can show that $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right), \lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, are linearly independent over $\mathbb{L}$ by the same argument as with the case of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$ 's (see §4.2).
4.5.2. Basis Theorem for $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ It is well-known that the usual Schur functions (polynomials) $s_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$, where $\ell(\lambda) \leq n$, form a $\mathbb{Z}$ basis of $\Lambda_{n}=\Lambda\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)=\mathbb{Z}\left[x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]^{S_{n}}$ (see Macdonald [46, I, §3, (3.2)]). Also the Grothendieck polynomials $G_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ form a $\mathbb{Z}[\beta]$ basis of $\mathbb{Z}[\beta]\left[x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]^{S_{n}}$ (see e.g., Ikeda-Naruse [25, Corollary 2.1], McNamara [49, Theorem 3.4]). Our functions $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right), \lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, also have the similar property. Indeed one can prove the following Basis Theorem:

Proposition 4.12 (Basis Theorem). $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ form a formal $\mathbb{L}$-basis for $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$.

Proof. We already remarked the linear independence of $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots\right.$, $x_{n}$ )'s, $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, over $\mathbb{L}$. Therefore it only remains to prove that an arbitrary symmetric formal power series $f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \in \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ can be written as a formal $\mathbb{L}$-linear combination of $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ 's. This folllows immediately from (37) and the fact that the usual Schur polynomials $s_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right), \lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, form a formal $\mathbb{L}$-basis for the ring $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)=\mathbb{L}\left[\left[e_{1}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right), \ldots, e_{n}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)\right]\right] . \quad$ Q.E.D.
4.5.3. Vanishing Property for $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ In order to prove the linear independence of $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), \lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, over $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$, we shall make use of the following vanishing property for $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ (for the vanishing property of the factorial Schur polynomials $s_{\lambda}(x \mid a)$, see Molev-Sagan [54, Theorem 2.1]. For the Grothendieck polynomials $G_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid b\right)$, see Ikeda-Naruse [25, Proposition 2.2], McNamara [49, Theorem 4.4]). Given a partition $\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, define the sequence

$$
\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu}:=\left(\bar{b}_{\mu_{1}}, \bar{b}_{\mu_{2}}, \ldots, \bar{b}_{\mu_{i}}, \ldots, \bar{b}_{\mu_{n}}\right)
$$

Then we have the following. Here we identify a partition $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \ldots\right)$ with its Young diagram

$$
D(\lambda)=\left\{(i, j) \in \mathbb{Z}^{2} \mid i \geq 1,1 \leq j \leq \lambda_{i}\right\}
$$

(see Macdonald [46, I, p.2]).
Proposition 4.13 (Vanishing Property). Let $\lambda, \mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$. Then we have

$$
s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } \mu \not \supset \lambda, \\ \prod_{(i, j) \in \lambda}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+n-i+1}+_{F} b_{n+j-\lambda^{\prime} \lambda_{j}}\right) & \text { if } \mu=\lambda,\end{cases}
$$

where $\rho_{n}=(n, n-1, \ldots, 2,1)$ and ${ }^{t} \lambda$ is the diagram conjugate to $\lambda$.

Proof. The proof is essentially identical to that of Molev-Sagan [54, Theorem 2.1 (Vanishing Theorem)]. See also Ivanov [26, Theorem 1.5 (the zero property)]. We shall exhibit a proof for the sake of completeness. Let us prove the first assertion. We use the expression (36):

$$
\begin{align*}
s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) & =\sum_{w \in S_{n}} w\left[\frac{[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]^{\lambda+\rho_{n-1}}}{\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}\right)}\right] \\
& =\sum_{w \in S_{n}}\left[\frac{\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left[x_{w(i)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{i}+n-i}}{\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{w(i)}+_{F} \bar{x}_{w(j)}\right)}\right] . \tag{38}
\end{align*}
$$

We wish to show that this becomes zero when we make a substitution

$$
\mathbf{x}_{n}=\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu+\rho_{n}}=\left(\bar{b}_{\mu_{1}+n}, \bar{b}_{\mu_{2}+n-1}, \ldots, \bar{b}_{\mu_{i}+n-i+1}, \ldots, \bar{b}_{\mu_{n}+1}\right) .
$$

The condition $\lambda \not \subset \mu$ implies that there exists an index $k$ such that $\mu_{k}<\lambda_{k}$ (and hence $\mu_{k}+1 \leq \lambda_{k}$ ). For an arbitrary permutation $w \in S_{n}$, there exists a positive integer $1 \leq j \leq k$ such that $w(j) \geq k$. Thus we have $\mu_{w(j)} \leq \mu_{k}<\lambda_{k} \leq \lambda_{j}$, and hence the following inequalities hold:

$$
\mu_{w(j)}+n-w(j)+1 \leq \mu_{k}+n-k+1 \leq \lambda_{k}+n-k \leq \lambda_{j}+n-j
$$

Therefore the term $\left[x_{w(j)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{j}+n-j}$ becomes zero when we specialize $x_{w(j)}$ to $\bar{b}_{\mu_{w(j)}+n-w(j)+1}$, and the first assertion follows.

Next consider the case $\mu=\lambda$. We shall show that in the expression (38), the terms other than the one corresponding to $w=e$ vanish when we set $\mathbf{x}_{n}=\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\lambda+\rho_{n}}$. For $w \neq e$, there exists a positive integer $1 \leq k \leq n$ such that $w(k)>k$ (and hence $w(k) \geq k+1$ ). Thus we have an inequality

$$
\lambda_{w(k)}+n-w(k)+1 \leq \lambda_{k}+n-k .
$$

Therefore the term $\left[x_{w(k)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{k}+n-k}$ becomes zero when we specialize $x_{w(k)}$ to $\bar{b}_{\lambda_{w(k)}+n-w(k)+1}$. The term corresponding to $w=e$ is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\left[\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\lambda_{+\rho}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda+\rho_{n-1}}}{\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+n-i+1}+_{F} b_{\lambda_{j}+n-j+1}\right)} \\
&= \frac{\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left[\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+n-i+1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{i}+n-i}}{} \\
& \prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+n-i+1}+_{F} b_{\lambda_{j}+n-j+1}\right) \\
& \frac{\prod_{i=1}^{n} \prod_{j=1}^{\lambda_{i}+n-i}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+n-i+1}+{ }_{F} b_{j}\right)}{\prod_{i=1}^{n} \prod_{j=i+1}^{n}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+n-i+1}+{ }_{F} b_{\lambda_{j}+n-j+1}\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By cancellation, we obtain the required formula.
Q.E.D.
4.5.4. Algebraic localization map of type $A_{\infty}$ In $\S 4.5 .2$, we have proven the Basis Theorem for $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ 's. We shall prove the Basis Theorem for $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ 's in $\S 4.5 .5$. In order to prove this, we shall exploit the "localization technique". This subsubsection will be devoted to a brief introduction of such technique. Here we shall introduce the following two devices: the GKM ring and the algebraic localization map. In order to define these two notions, we freely use the standard notations and conventions about the Weyl group, the root system, the Grassmannian elements of type $A_{\infty}$. We collect them in the Appendix 6.2.1 for the reader's convenience.

First we introduce the GKM ring. Let $L$ denote a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with a basis $\left\{t_{i}\right\}_{i \geq 1}$. The positive roots $\Delta_{A}^{+} \subset L$ of type $A_{\infty}$ are given by

$$
\Delta_{A}^{+}=\left\{\alpha_{j, i}=t_{j}-t_{i} \mid j>i \geq 1\right\}
$$

The simple roots are given by $\alpha_{i}=\alpha_{i+1, i}(i \geq 1)$. We define a map $e: L \longrightarrow \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ by setting $e\left(t_{i}\right):=b_{i}(i \geq 1)$ and by the rule $e(\alpha+$ $\left.\alpha^{\prime}\right):=e\left(\underline{\alpha)+_{F}} e\left(\alpha^{\prime}\right)\right.$ for $\alpha, \alpha^{\prime} \in L$. Note that by definition, we have $e(-\alpha)=\overline{e(\alpha)}$ for $\alpha \in L$. For the simple root $\alpha_{i}=t_{i+1}-t_{i}(i \geq 1)$, we have

$$
e\left(\alpha_{i}\right)=e\left(t_{i+1}-t_{i}\right)=b_{i+1}+_{F} \bar{b}_{i} \quad(i \geq 1)
$$

Let $\operatorname{Map}\left(\mathcal{P}_{n}, \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right)$ denote the set of all maps $\psi: \mathcal{P}_{n} \longrightarrow \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]], \lambda \longmapsto$ $\psi_{\lambda}$. It has a natural $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-algebra structure under pointwise multiplication $(\psi \cdot \varphi)_{\lambda}:=\psi_{\lambda} \cdot \varphi_{\lambda}$ for $\psi, \varphi \in \operatorname{Map}\left(\mathcal{P}_{n}, \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right)$ and scalar multiplication $(c \cdot \psi)_{\lambda}:=c \cdot \psi_{\lambda}$ for $c \in \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]], \psi \in \operatorname{Map}\left(\mathcal{P}_{n}, \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right)$. Hereafter we use the identification $\operatorname{Map}\left(\mathcal{P}_{n}, \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right) \cong \prod_{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}}(\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]])_{\mu}$. Thus an element $\psi \in \operatorname{Map}\left(\mathcal{P}_{n}, \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right)$ can be regarded as a collection $\psi=\left(\psi_{\mu}\right)_{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}}$ with $\psi_{\mu} \in \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$. With these notations, we introduce the GKM ring.

Definition 4.14 (GKM ring of type $A_{\infty}$ ). Let $\Psi_{A}^{(n)}$ be a subring of $\operatorname{Map}\left(\mathcal{P}_{n}, \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right) \cong \prod_{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}}(\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]])_{\mu}$ that consists of elements $\psi=$ $\left(\psi_{\mu}\right)_{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}}$ satisfying the following condition (GKM condition) :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{s_{\alpha} \mu}-\psi_{\mu} \in e(-\alpha) \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \quad \text { for all } \mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n} \text { and all } \alpha \in \Delta^{+}=\Delta_{A}^{+} \tag{39}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is easy to see that $\Psi_{A}^{(n)}$ is indeed a subring (more precisely, an $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ subalgebra) of $\prod_{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}}(\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]])_{\mu}$. We call the ring $\Psi_{A}^{(n)}$ the GKM ring of type $A_{\infty}$.

Next we shall introduce the algebraic localization map of type $A_{\infty}$. For each partition $\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, define an $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-algebra homomorphism
$\phi_{\mu, A}^{(n)}: \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \longrightarrow \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]], F=F\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \longmapsto \phi_{\mu, A}^{(n)}(F)$
by $\phi_{\mu, A}^{(n)}(F):=F\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$.
Definition 4.15 (Algebraic localization map of type $A_{\infty}$ ). Define the homomorphism of $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-algebras to be

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi_{A}^{(n)}: \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \longrightarrow \prod_{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}}(\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]])_{\mu}, F \longmapsto \Phi_{A}^{(n)}(F):=\left(\phi_{\mu, A}^{(n)}(F)\right)_{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} \tag{40}
\end{equation*}
$$

We call the homomorphism $\Phi_{A}^{(n)}$ the algebraic localization map of type $A_{\infty}$.

## Lemma 4.16.

(1) The image of $\Phi_{A}^{(n)}$ is contained in the GKM ring $\Psi_{A}^{(n)}$, that is, $\operatorname{Im}\left(\Phi_{A}^{(n)}\right) \subset \Psi_{A}^{(n)}$.
(2) The homomorphism $\Phi_{A}^{(n)}$ is injective.

Proof. (1) For an arbitrary $F=F\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \in \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$, we have to show that $F\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{s_{\alpha} \mu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)-F\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \in e(-\alpha) \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ for all $\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$ and for all $\alpha \in \Delta^{+}$. More accurately, we have to show that

$$
F\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{s_{t_{j}-t_{i}} \mu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)-F\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \in\left\langle\bar{b}_{j}+_{F} b_{i}\right\rangle \quad \text { for } j>i \geq 1,
$$

where $\left\langle\bar{b}_{j}+_{F} b_{i}\right\rangle$ denotes an ideal of $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ generated by $\bar{b}_{j}+_{F} b_{i}$. This is a direct consequence of the action of the reflection $s_{t_{j}-t_{i}}$ on $\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$ (see Appendix 6.2.1) and Lemma 4.5.
(2) We shall prove the following statement:

For $F \in \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$, suppose that there exists a positive integer $N$ (which may depend on $n$ ) such that $\phi_{\mu}^{(n)}(F)=0$ for all partitions $\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$ containing $\left(N^{n}\right)=(N, N, \ldots, N)$. Then we have $F=0$.

From this, the conclusion of (2) immediately follows. Let us prove the above statement by induction on the number $n$ of $x$-variables. For the case $n=1$, the proof is easy. For if $F=F\left(x_{1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \in \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\left[\left[x_{1}\right]\right]$ satisfies the assumption, we have $F\left(\bar{b}_{N+k} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=0$ for all $k \geq 1$. This implies that $F\left(x_{1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ is divisible by $x_{1}-\bar{b}_{N+k}$ for all $k \geq 1$. From this, we conclude that $F=0$ as a formal power series in $x_{1}$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$.

Next we consider the case $n>1$, and assume that the above assertion holds for the case of $n-1$ variables $\mathbf{x}_{n-1}$. Suppose that $F=$ $F\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \in \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ satisfies the assumption $\phi_{\mu}^{(n)}(F)=0$ for all $\mu \supset$ $\left(N^{n}\right)$. For each $k \geq 1$, we put $F_{k}=F_{k}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n-1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right):=F\left(\mathbf{x}_{n-1}, \bar{b}_{N+k} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$. Then we see easily that $F_{k} \in \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n-1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ and $\phi_{\nu}^{(n-1)}\left(F_{k}\right)=0$ for all
$\nu \in \mathcal{P}_{n-1}$ such that $\left.\nu \supset\left((N+k)^{n-1}\right)\right)$. Therefore by the induction hypothesis, we have $F_{k}=0$ as a formal power series in $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$. Thus $F$ depends only on the variable $x_{n}$. But $F$ vanishes when we set $x_{n}=\bar{b}_{N+k}$ for all $k \geq 1$, and hence we deduce that $F=0$ as required.
Q.E.D.
4.5.5. Basis Theorem for $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ The factorial Schur polynomials $s_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid a\right)$, where $\ell(\lambda) \leq n$, form a $\mathbb{Z}[a]$-basis of $\mathbb{Z}[a] \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \Lambda_{n}$ (see Macdonald [46, I, §3, Examples 20]). For the factorial Grothendieck polynomials $G_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$, readers are referred to Ikeda-Naruse [25, Lemma 2.5], McNamara [49, Theorems 4.6, 4.9]. By the technique introduced in the previous subsubsection, we shall prove the Basis Theorem for the universal factorial Schur functions $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ 's.

Theorem 4.17 (Basis Theorem). $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ form a formal $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-basis for $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$.

The proof of this theorem will be divided into two steps: the linear independence property and the generation (spanning) property.

Proof of Theorem 4.17 (Linear independence property). We show the linear independence of $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ 's over $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ by using the Vanishing Property (Proposition 4.13). Suppose that there exists a linear relation of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{\lambda} c_{\lambda}(\mathbf{b}) s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=0 \quad\left(c_{\lambda}(\mathbf{b}) \in \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right) . \tag{41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\mu$ be minimal (with respect to the containement) among all partitions in (41) such that $c_{\lambda}(\mathbf{b}) \neq 0$. We set $\mathbf{x}_{n}=\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu+\rho_{n}}$ in (41). Then using the first part of Proposition 4.13 and the choice of $\mu$, we obtain

$$
c_{\mu}(\mathbf{b}) s_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=0 .
$$

By the second part of Proposition 4.13, we have $s_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \neq 0$, and hence we have $c_{\mu}(\mathbf{b})=0$. We repeat this process, and we finally conclude that all the coefficients $c_{\lambda}(\mathbf{b})$ turn out to be zero.
Q.E.D.

Proof of Theorem 4.17 (generation (spanning) property). Let $F=$ $F\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \in \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$. We wish to express $F$ as a formal $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-linear combination of $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}, \lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$. Define the support of $F$ by

$$
\operatorname{Supp}(F):=\left\{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n} \mid \phi_{\mu}^{(n)}(F) \neq 0\right\} \subset \mathcal{P}_{n}
$$

Let $\nu \in \operatorname{Supp}(F)$ be a minimal element (with respect to the containment). We know from Lemma 4.16 (1) that $\Phi^{(n)}(F)=\left(\phi_{\mu}^{(n)}(F)\right)_{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} \in$
$\Psi^{(n)}$, therefore by the GKM condition (39) and the minimality of $\nu$, we see that $\phi_{\nu}^{(n)}(F)$ is divisible by $e(-\alpha)$ for all $\alpha \in \operatorname{Inv}(\nu)$. Since the elements $\{e(-\alpha) \mid \alpha \in \operatorname{Inv}(\nu)\}$ are relatively prime, $\phi_{\nu}^{(n)}(F)$ is divisible by their product $\prod_{\alpha \in \operatorname{Inv}(\nu)} e(-\alpha)$. Here we know from the Vanishing Property (Proposition 4.13) and (52) (see Appendix 6.2.1) that

$$
\phi_{\nu}^{(n)}\left(s_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\right)=s_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\nu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\prod_{(i, j) \in \nu}\left(\bar{b}_{\nu_{i}+n-i+1}+_{F} b_{n+j-t_{\nu}}\right)=\prod_{\alpha \in \operatorname{Inv}(\nu)} e(-\alpha) .
$$

Thus we have $\phi_{\nu}^{(n)}(F)=c_{\nu} \cdot \phi_{\nu}^{(n)}\left(s_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\right)$ for some $c_{\nu} \in \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$. Let

$$
F^{\prime}:=F-c_{\nu} \cdot s_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}} .
$$

Then we have $\phi_{\nu}^{(n)}\left(F^{\prime}\right)=\phi_{\nu}^{(n)}(F)-c_{\nu} \cdot \phi_{\nu}^{(n)}\left(s_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\right)=0$, and hence $\nu \notin$ $\operatorname{Supp}\left(F^{\prime}\right)$. Moreover, for every $\mu \in \operatorname{Supp}\left(F^{\prime}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Supp}(F)$ (obviously, $\mu \neq \nu$ ), we have $0 \neq \phi_{\mu}^{(n)}\left(F^{\prime}\right)=\phi_{\mu}^{(n)}(F)-c_{\nu} \cdot \phi_{\mu}^{(n)}\left(s_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}\right)=-c_{\nu} \cdot \phi_{\mu}^{(n)}\left(s_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\right)=$ $-c_{\nu} \cdot s_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu+\rho_{n}} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$, and hence $\nu<\mu$. Therefore $\operatorname{Supp}\left(F^{\prime}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Supp}(F)$ consists of elements strictly greater than $\nu$. Then we apply to $F^{\prime}$ the above argument, and repeat this. Eventually, we will obtain the function $\tilde{F}$ of the form $\tilde{F}=F-\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} c_{\lambda} \cdot s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$ with $c_{\lambda} \in \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ whose restriction $\phi_{\mu}^{(n)}(\tilde{F})$ to all $\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$ vanish, i.e., $\Phi^{(n)}(\tilde{F})=0$. Since the homomorphism $\Phi^{(n)}$ is injective (Lemma $4.16(2)$ ), we have $\tilde{F}=0$, and hence we obtain the required expression.
Q.E.D.

Corollary 4.18 (Corollary to the proof of Theorem 4.17). The algebraic localization map $\Phi_{A}^{(n)}$ is onto the GKM $\operatorname{ring} \Psi_{A}^{(n)}$.

Proof. Let $\psi=\left(\psi_{\mu}\right)_{\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} \in \Psi_{A}^{(n)}$, and put $\operatorname{Supp}(\psi)=\{\mu \in$ $\left.\mathcal{P}_{n} \mid \psi_{\mu} \neq 0\right\} \subset \mathcal{P}_{n}$. Applying the same argument as in the proof of the above theorem, one sees that $\psi$ is the image of a certain function of the form $\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} c_{\lambda} \cdot s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$, whence the result follows.
Q.E.D.

### 4.6. Factorization Formula

The following factorization property (cf. Pragacz [55, Proposition 2.2], Ikeda-Naruse [25, Proposition 2.3]) will be useful in the proof of the Basis Theorem below (Theorem 4.20).

Proposition 4.19 (Factorization Formula). For a positive integer $k \geq 1$, let $\rho_{k}$ denote the partition $(k, k-1, \ldots, 2,1)$ (and $\rho_{0}=\emptyset$ by convention).
(1) For a positive integer n, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P_{\rho_{n-1}}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\left(\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right)\right) s_{\emptyset}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), \\
& Q_{\rho_{n}}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\left(\prod_{1 \leq i \leq j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right)\right) s_{\emptyset}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

(2) For a a positive integer $n$ and a partition $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \ldots, \lambda_{n}\right) \in$ $\mathcal{P}_{n}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P_{\rho_{n-1}+\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\left(\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right)\right) s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), \\
& Q_{\rho_{n}+\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\left(\prod_{1 \leq i \leq j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right)\right) s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Proof. The first formulas (1) follow immediately from (2) once we put $\lambda=\emptyset$. We shall show the formulas (2). We first prove the case of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$. Note that the length of $\rho_{n-1}+\lambda$ is $n-1$ or $n$. In any case, the product in the expression (33) becomes $[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]^{\lambda+\rho_{n-1}} \prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n} \frac{x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}}{x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}}$. Therefore we modify it as follows:

$$
[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]^{\lambda+\rho_{n-1}} \prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n} \frac{x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}}{x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}}=\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right) \times \frac{[x \mid \mathbf{b}]^{\lambda+\rho_{n-1}}}{\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}\right)} .
$$

Since $\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right)$ is symmetric, we have from (33),

$$
\begin{aligned}
P_{\rho_{n-1}+\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)= & \prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right) \\
& \times \sum_{w \in S_{n}} w\left[\frac{[x \mid \mathbf{b}]^{\lambda+\rho_{n-1}}}{\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}\right)}\right] \\
= & \prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right) \times s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

For the case of $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$, the product in the expression (33) becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
& {[[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]]^{\lambda+\rho_{n}} \prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n} \frac{x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}}{x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}} } \\
= & \prod_{i=1}^{n}\left(x_{i}+{ }_{F} x_{i}\right)\left[x_{i} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{i}+n-i} \times \prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n} \frac{x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}}{x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}} \\
= & \prod_{1 \leq i \leq j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right) \times \frac{[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]^{\lambda+\rho_{n-1}}}{\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+{ }_{F} \bar{x}_{j}\right)},
\end{aligned}
$$

and the result follows.
Q.E.D.

### 4.7. Basis Theorem for $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}), Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$

In [55, Theorem 2.11], Pragacz showed that the usual Schur $P$ polynomials $P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ form a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis for the ring $\Gamma_{n}=$ $\Gamma\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ of "supersymmetric polynomials" (cf. Macdonald [46, III, (8.9)]). Their $K$-theoretic analogues $G P_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ form a $\mathbb{Z}[\beta]$ basis for the ring $G \Gamma_{n}$ of " $K$-supersymmetric polynomials" (Ikeda-Naruse [25, Theorem 3.1]). Our functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ also have the similar property. Namely we have the following theorem:

Theorem 4.20 (Basis Theorem).
(1) The formal power series $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ form $a$ formal $\mathbb{L}$-basis of $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$.
(2) The formal power series $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ form $a$ formal $\mathbb{L}$-basis of $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$.
Proof. For the proof of this theorem, we make use of the same strategy as in Ikeda-Naruse [25, Theorem 3.1], Pragacz [55, Theorem 2.11 (Q)], and thus we shall only prove the case (1) when $n$ is even. First note that $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ are linearly independent over $\mathbb{L}$ as we showed earlier (see $\S 4.2$ ). We use the induction on the number of the variables $n$. Let $n=2$ and $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ be an $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric function. We may assume that the constant term of $f$ is zero, namely $f(0,0)=0$. Then $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetricity implies that $f(t, \bar{t})=f(0,0)=0$. Therefore by Lemma 4.5, $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ is divisible by $x_{1}+_{F} x_{2}$. Thus $f$ can be written as $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=\left(x_{1}+_{F} x_{2}\right) g\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ for some symmetric function $g\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$. By the Basis Theorem for $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ 's (Proposition 4.12), we can write $g\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{2}} c_{\lambda} s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right), c_{\lambda} \in \mathbb{L}$. Then by the factorization property (Proposition 4.19), we have

$$
f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{2}} c_{\lambda}\left(x_{1}+_{F} x_{2}\right) s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{2}} c_{\lambda} P_{\rho_{1}+\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right) .
$$

Thus $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ is an $\mathbb{L}$-linear combination of $P_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ 's, $\mu \in \mathcal{S P}_{2}$ (note that for $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{2}$, we have $\left.\rho_{1}+\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}_{2}\right)$.

For $n \geq 4$, we proceed as follows. Let $f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ be an $\mathbb{L}$ supersymmetric function. Notice that $f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, t, \bar{t}\right)=f\left(x_{1}, \ldots\right.$, $\left.x_{n-2}, 0,0\right)$ holds. Put $f_{1}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}\right):=f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, 0,0\right)$. Since $f_{1}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}\right)$ is also $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric, we can write $f_{1}$ as an $\mathbb{L}$-linear combination of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}\right)$ 's with $\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n-2}$ by the induction hypothesis. Thus we have the following expression:

$$
f_{1}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}\right)=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n-2}} c_{\lambda} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}\right), \quad c_{\lambda} \in \mathbb{L} .
$$

Consider the function $g\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right):=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n-2}} c_{\lambda} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$. Note that $g\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, 0,0\right)=f_{1}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}\right)=f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, 0,0\right)$ holds because of the stability of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}$. Put $h\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right):=f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)-$ $g\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
h\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, t, \bar{t}\right) & =h\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, 0,0\right) \\
& =f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, 0,0\right)-g\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, 0,0\right)=0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies that $x_{n-1}+_{F} x_{n}$ divides $h$. Since $h$ is symmetric, we see that $h$ is a multiple of $V:=\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} x_{j}\right)$. Thus we have

$$
f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=g\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)+V \cdot s\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)
$$

for some symmetric function $s$. By the Basis Theorem for $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ 's (Proposition 4.12) again, we can write

$$
s\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} d_{\lambda} s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right), \quad d_{\lambda} \in \mathbb{L}
$$

Using the factorization theorem (Proposition 4.19) again, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
f & =g+V \cdot s \\
& =\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n-2}} c_{\lambda} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)+\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} d_{\lambda}\left(\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+{ }_{F} x_{j}\right)\right) s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \\
& =\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}_{n-2}} c_{\lambda} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)+\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} d_{\lambda} P_{\rho_{n-1}+\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that if $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, then $\rho_{n-1}+\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$. Thus $f$ can be written as an $\mathbb{L}$-linear combination of $P_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ 's, $\mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$.
Q.E.D.

Taking limit $n \rightarrow \infty$, we obtain the following:

Corollary 4.21 (Basis Theorem).
(1) The formal power series $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})(\lambda \in \mathcal{S P})$ form a formal $\mathbb{L}$-basis of $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$.
(2) The formal power series $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})(\lambda \in \mathcal{S P})$ form a formal $\mathbb{L}$-basis of $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$.

### 4.8. Vanishing Property

Various factorial analogues of Schur $P$ - and $Q$ - polynomials (functions) satisfy the vanishing property (see Ivanov [26, Theorem 1.5 (the zero property)], [27, Theorem 5.3 (Vanishing property)], Ikeda-Naruse [23, Proposition 8.3], Ikeda-Mihalcea-Naruse [24, Proposition 4.2], IkedaNaruse [25, Proposition 7.1]). In this subsection, we shall prove the vanishing property for the functions $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+}$'s (for its definition, see $\S 4.4$ ) and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ 's. For a strict partition $\mu=\left(\mu_{1}, \ldots, \mu_{r}\right)$ of length $r$, we set

$$
\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu}:=\left(\bar{b}_{\mu_{1}}, \ldots, \bar{b}_{\mu_{r}}, 0,0, \ldots\right) .
$$

We also set

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
\operatorname{sh}(\mu) & :=\left(\mu_{1}+1, \ldots, \mu_{r}+1\right) & \text { if } r \text { is even, } \\
\operatorname{sh}(\mu) & :=\left(\mu_{1}+1, \ldots, \mu_{r}+1,1\right) & \text { if } r \text { is odd. }
\end{array}
$$

Here we consider only even variable case $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{2 n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ because of the mod 2 stability (see Proposition 4.8).

Proposition 4.22 (Vanishing Property). Let $\lambda, \mu \in \mathcal{S P}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mathrm{sh}(\mu)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+}=0 \quad \text { if } \quad \mu \not \supset \lambda,  \tag{1}\\
& P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mathrm{sh}(\lambda)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+} \\
& =\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left(\prod_{\substack{1 \leq j \leq \lambda_{i} \\
j \neq \lambda_{p}+1 \\
\text { for } \\
i+1 \leq p \leq r}}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+1}+{ }_{F} b_{j}\right) \cdot \prod_{j=i+1}^{r}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+1}+{ }_{F} \bar{b}_{\lambda_{j}+1}\right)\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=0 \quad \text { if } \mu \not \supset \lambda,  \tag{2}\\
& Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\lambda} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left(\prod_{\substack{1 \leq j \leq \lambda_{i}-1,1 \\
j \neq \lambda_{p} \text { for } i+1 \leq p \leq r}}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}}+{ }_{F} b_{j}\right) \cdot \prod_{j=i}^{r}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}}+{ }_{F} \bar{b}_{\lambda_{j}}\right)\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. We will only prove (1) when the length $\ell(\mu)=r$ is even. The proofs of the remaining cases are similar. Using the stability property (Proposition 4.8), $\quad P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mathrm{sh}(\mu)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+} \quad$ can be evaluated as $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\bar{b}_{\mu_{1}+1}, \bar{b}_{\mu_{2}+1}, \ldots, \bar{b}_{\mu_{r}+1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$.

If $\mu \not \supset \lambda$, there exists an index $1 \leq k \leq r$ such that $\mu_{k}<\lambda_{k}$ (and hence $\mu_{k}+1 \leq \lambda_{k}$ ). For an arbitrary permutation $w \in S_{r}$, there exists a positive integer $1 \leq j \leq k$ such that $w(j) \geq k$. Then we have inequalities $\mu_{w(j)} \leq \mu_{k}<\lambda_{k} \leq \lambda_{j}$. Therefore the term

$$
\begin{aligned}
{\left[x_{w(j)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{j}}=\left(x_{w(j)}+{ }_{F} b_{1}\right)\left(x_{w(j)}+{ }_{F} b_{2}\right) \cdots( } & \left.x_{w(j)}+{ }_{F} b_{\mu_{w(j)}+1}\right) \\
& \cdots\left(x_{w(j)}+{ }_{F} b_{\lambda_{j}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

vanishes when we specialize $x_{w(j)}$ to $\bar{b}_{\mu_{w(j)}+1}$. This means that $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\operatorname{sh}(\mu)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=0$.

For the case $\mu=\lambda$, we shall show that in the defining equation (33) of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{r} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$, each term corresponding to $w \in S_{r}$ other than the identity $e$ becomes zero when we evaluate them at $\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{r}\right)=$ $\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mathrm{sh}(\lambda)}=\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{1}+1}, \ldots, \bar{b}_{\lambda_{r}+1}\right)$. For $w \neq e$, there exists an index $1 \leq k \leq r$ such that $w(k)>k$. Thus we have $\lambda_{w(k)}<\lambda_{k}$ (and hence $\lambda_{w(k)}+1 \leq$ $\left.\lambda_{k}\right)$. Then it is obvious that

$$
\begin{array}{r}
{\left[x_{w(k)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{k}}=\left(x_{w(k)}+{ }_{F} b_{1}\right)\left(x_{w(k)}+_{F} b_{2}\right) \cdots\left(x_{w(k)}+{ }_{F} b_{\lambda_{w(k)}+1}\right)} \\
\cdots\left(x_{w(k)}+{ }_{F} b_{\lambda_{k}}\right)
\end{array}
$$

becomes zero when we specialize $x_{w(k)}$ to $\bar{b}_{\lambda_{w(k)}+1}$. The term corresponding to $w=e$ is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \prod_{i=1}^{r}\left[\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+1} \mid \mathbf{b}\right]^{\lambda_{i}} \prod_{i=1}^{r} \prod_{j=i+1}^{r} \frac{\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+1}+{ }_{F} \bar{b}_{\lambda_{j}+1}}{\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+1}+_{F} b_{\lambda_{j}+1}} \\
= & \prod_{i=1}^{r}\left(\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+1}+_{F} b_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+1}+_{F} b_{\lambda_{i}}\right) \times \prod_{j=i+1}^{r} \frac{\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+1}+_{F} \bar{b}_{\lambda_{j}+1}}{\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+1}+_{F} b_{\lambda_{j}+1}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By cancellation, we obtain the desired value.
Q.E.D.
4.9. Algebraic localization map of types $B_{\infty}, C_{\infty}$, or $D_{\infty}$

In $\S 4.7$, we have proven the Basis Theorem for $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ 's and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)^{\prime}$ 's. We shall prove the Basis Theorem for $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+}$'s and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{\prime}$ 's in §4.10. For the proof, we apply the same technique as the case of $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ (see §4.5.5), namely the Vanishing Property (Proposition 4.22) and the localization technique. Because the idea of the proof is the same as that
of Theorem 4.17, we only exhibit the definitions and the results. We mainly follow the notation and convention as in Ikeda-Naruse [25, §4] and Ikeda-Mihalcea-Naruse $[24, \S 3]$ (we collect the necessary data in the Appendix 6.2.2).

Let us introduce the GKM ring and the algebraic localization maps of type $X_{\infty}$ for $X=B, C$, or $D$. As with the type $A_{\infty}$ case (§4.5.4), denote by $\operatorname{Map}\left(\mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}, \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right)$ the set of all maps from $\mathcal{S P}_{n}$ to $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$. It is an $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-algebra under pointwise multiplication and scalar multiplication. We identify $\operatorname{Map}\left(\mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}, \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right)$ with the product ring $\prod_{\mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}}(\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]])_{\mu}$.

Definition 4.23 (GKM ring of type $X_{\infty}$ ). Let $X$ be $B$, $C$, or D. Let $\Psi_{X}^{(n)}$ be a subring of $\operatorname{Map}\left(\mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}, \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]\right)$ that consists of elements $\psi=\left(\psi_{\mu}\right)_{\mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}}$ satisfying the following GKM condition:

$$
\psi_{s_{\alpha} \mu}-\psi_{\mu} \in e(-\alpha) \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \quad \text { for all } \mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n} \text { and all } \alpha \in \Delta_{X}^{+}
$$

We call $\Psi_{X}^{(n)}$ the GKM ring of type $X_{\infty}$.
Next we shall introduce the algebraic localization map of type $X_{\infty}$ for $X=C, D$. For each strict partition $\mu \in \mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}$, define the $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ algebra homomorphisms to be

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \phi_{\mu, C}^{(n)}: \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \longrightarrow \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]], \\
& F=F\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \longmapsto \phi_{\mu, C}^{(n)}(F):=F\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\mu} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), \\
& \phi_{\mu, D}^{(n)}: \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)=\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]] \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \longrightarrow \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]], \\
& F=F\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \longmapsto \phi_{\mu, D}^{(n)}(F):=F\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\operatorname{sh}(\mu)} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Definition 4.24 (Algebraic localization map of type $X_{\infty}$ ). Define the homomorphisms of $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-algebras to be
$\Phi_{C}^{(n)}: \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \longrightarrow \prod_{\mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}}(\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]])_{\mu}, F \longmapsto \Phi_{C}^{(n)}(F):=\left(\phi_{\mu, C}^{(n)}(F)\right)_{\mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}}$,
$\Phi_{D}^{(n)}: \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right) \longrightarrow \prod_{\mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}}(\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]])_{\mu}, F \longmapsto \Phi_{D}^{(n)}(F):=\left(\phi_{\mu, D}^{(n)}(F)\right)_{\mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}}$.
We call the homomorphism $\Phi_{X}^{(n)}$ the algebraic localization map of type $X_{\infty}$. Concerning the above algebraic localization maps, the following lemma can be proved analogously (see the proof of Lemma 4.16):

Lemma 4.25. Let $X$ be $C$ or $D$. Then we have
(1) The image of $\Phi_{X}^{(n)}$ agrees with the $G K M \operatorname{ring} \Psi_{X}^{(n)}: \operatorname{Im}\left(\Phi_{X}^{(n)}\right)=$ $\Psi_{X}^{(n)}$.
(2) The homomorphism $\Phi_{X}^{(n)}$ is injective.
4.10. Basis Theorem for $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})^{+}, Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$

The GKM ring and the algebraic localization map of type $X_{\infty}$ for $X=B, C$, or $D$, and an analogous argument as in the Basis Theorem for $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ 's (Theorem 4.17) enable us to prove the Basis Theorem for $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})^{+}$'s and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})^{\prime} s$.

Theorem 4.26 (Basis Theorem).
(1) The formal power series $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+}\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ form a formal $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-basis of $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$.
(2) The formal power series $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)\left(\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}\right)$ form a formal $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-basis of $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$.

Taking limit $n \rightarrow \infty$, we obtain the following:
Corollary 4.27 (Basis Theorem).
(1) The formal power series $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})^{+}(\lambda \in \mathcal{S P})$ form a formal $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-basis of $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$.
(2) The formal power series $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})(\lambda \in \mathcal{S P})$ form a formal $\mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$-basis of $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})$.

## §5. Dual universal (factorial) Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions

In the previous section, we have constructed "cohomology bases" $\left\{P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})^{+}\right\}$and $\left\{Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b})\right\}$. Our next task is to construct the corresponding "homology bases" $\left\{\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y} \mid \mathbf{b})\right\}$ and $\left\{\hat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y} \mid \mathbf{b})\right\}$. In this section, we consider this problem only in the non-equivariant case, i.e., $\mathbf{b}=0$. Namely, we shall construct certain functions $\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ (resp. $\hat{q}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ ) for strict partitions $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$ dual to $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ (resp. $\left.P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right)$. Here we use the countably infinite set of variables $\mathbf{y}=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots\right)$. Their degrees are given by $\operatorname{deg}\left(y_{i}\right)=1$ and $\operatorname{deg}_{h}\left(a_{i, j}\right)=i+j-1(i, j \geq 1)$. Let $\Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\mathbb{L}_{*} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \Lambda(\mathbf{y})$ be the ring of symmetric functions in $\mathbf{y}$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}_{*}$ (see the beginning of $\S 4.2$ ).

### 5.1. One row case

First we shall construct the required functions corresponding to the "one rows", that is, strict partitions $(k)(k=1,2, \ldots)$. We put

$$
\Delta(t ; \mathbf{y}):=\prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1-\bar{t} y_{j}}{1-t y_{j}} \in \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})[[t]]
$$

Then we define $\hat{q}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \in \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})(k=0,1,2, \ldots)$ as the coefficients of the following expansion:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta(t ; \mathbf{y})=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \hat{q}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) t^{k} \tag{42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next we shall define $\widehat{p}_{k}^{L}(\mathbf{y}) \in \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})(k=1,2, \ldots)$ as the coefficients of the following expansion:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta(t ; \mathbf{y})=1+\left(t+_{F} t\right) \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \widehat{p}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) t^{k-1} \tag{43}
\end{equation*}
$$

We set $\widehat{p}_{0}^{\mathrm{L}}(\mathbf{y}):=1$ by convention. In order to make the above definition valid, we have to verify that $\Delta(t ; \mathbf{y})-1$ is divisible by $t+{ }_{F} t$. This follows from Lemma 4.5. More concretely, if we write $t+{ }_{F} t=2 t+\sum_{k=2}^{\infty} \alpha_{k}^{\mathbb{L}} t^{k}$ with $\alpha_{k}^{\mathbb{L}} \in \mathbb{L}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{q}_{1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=2 \widehat{p}_{1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \quad \widehat{q}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=2 \widehat{p}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})+\sum_{j=1}^{k-1} \alpha_{k+1-j}^{\mathbb{L}} \widehat{p}_{j}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})(k \geq 2) . \tag{44}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Remark 5.1.

(1) Notice that comparing (42) (resp. (43)) with the equation (23) (resp. (25)), we see immediately that $\widehat{q}_{k}^{L}(\mathbf{y})(k=1,2, \ldots)$ (resp. $\left.\hat{p}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})(k=1,2, \ldots)\right)$ coincide with $\widehat{q}_{k}^{M U}(\mathbf{y})\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\widehat{p}_{k}^{M U}(\mathbf{y})\right)$ in Definition 3.1 (resp. Definition 3.5).
(2) It follows from Definition 4.1 that $P_{(k)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}\right)=x_{1}^{k}$ and $Q_{(k)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}\right)=$ $\left(x_{1}+_{F} x_{1}\right) x_{1}^{k-1}$ for $k=1,2, \ldots$. Therefore we can write (42) and (43) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta\left(x_{1} ; \mathbf{y}\right)=\prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{1} y_{j}}{1-x_{1} y_{j}}=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} P_{(k)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}\right) \hat{q}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} Q_{(k)}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}\right) \hat{p}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \tag{45}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 5.2. Definition of $\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$

In $\S 5.1$, we have constructed $\hat{p}_{k}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\widehat{q}_{k}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ corresponding to the one rows $(k)(k=1,2, \ldots)$. In this subsection, we extend these functions to arbitrary strict partitions $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$. For this end, we argue as follows. Define
$\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}):=$ the $\mathbb{L}$-subalgebra of $\Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ generated by $\hat{p}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), k=1,2, \ldots$,
$\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y}):=$ the $\mathbb{L}$-subalgebra of $\Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ generated by $\hat{q}_{k}^{L}(\mathbf{y}), k=1,2, \ldots$

As we remarked in the previous subsection, $\hat{p}_{k}^{L L}(\mathbf{y})=\widehat{p}_{k}^{M U}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\widehat{q}_{k}^{L}(\mathbf{y})=$ $\widehat{q}_{k}^{M U}(\mathbf{y})$ for $k=1,2, \ldots$, and hence the above algebras $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y})$ coincide with the algebras $\Gamma_{*}^{M U}$ and $\Gamma_{*}^{M U}$ respectively defined in Definitions 3.7 and 3.4. In particular, we have
$\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\mathbb{L}\left[\hat{p}_{1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \hat{p}_{3}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \ldots, \hat{p}_{2 i-1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \ldots\right]\left(\cong M U_{*}(\Omega S p)\right)$,
$\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y})=\mathbb{L}\left[\widehat{q}_{1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \widehat{q}_{2}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \ldots, \widehat{q}_{i}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \ldots\right] /\left(\widehat{q}^{\mathbb{L}}(T) \widehat{q}^{\mathbb{L}}(\bar{T})=1\right)\left(\cong M U_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)\right)$,
where $\widehat{q}^{\mathbb{L}}(T):=\sum_{k \geq 0} \widehat{q}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) T^{k}$. Also $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y})$ have the Hopf algebra structure over $\mathbb{L}$ as explained in $\S 3.2$.

For later discussion, we prepare the following: For a partition $\lambda=$ $\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{r}\right)$, define the monomials

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{p}_{[\lambda]}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) & :=\prod_{i=1}^{r} \hat{p}_{\lambda_{i}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\widehat{p}_{\lambda_{1}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \widehat{p}_{\lambda_{2}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \cdots \hat{p}_{\lambda_{r}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \\
\widehat{q}_{[\lambda]}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) & :=\prod_{i=1}^{r} \hat{q}_{\lambda_{i}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\hat{q}_{\lambda_{1}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \hat{q}_{\lambda_{2}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \cdots \hat{q}_{\lambda_{r}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that there exist some relations among $\hat{p}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ 's and $\hat{q}_{k}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ 's (see the relations (24) and (28)), and these monomials are not linearly independent over $\mathbb{L}$. Then we define the $\mathbb{L}$-submodule of $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\left(\operatorname{resp} . \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y})\right)$ spanned by these monomials $\hat{p}_{[\lambda]}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ 's (resp. ${\underset{q}{[\lambda]}}_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ 's) with $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{(n)}(\mathbf{y}) & :=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} \mathbb{L} \hat{p}_{[\lambda]}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \subset \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \\
\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{(n),+}(\mathbf{y}) & :=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} \mathbb{L} \hat{q}_{[\lambda]}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \subset \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now consider the iterated product of $\Delta\left(x_{i} ; \mathbf{y}\right)$ 's, and their limit.

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right) & =\Delta\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right):=\prod_{i=1}^{n} \Delta\left(x_{i} ; \mathbf{y}\right)=\prod_{i=1}^{n} \prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}} \\
\Delta(\mathbf{x} ; \mathbf{y}) & :={\underset{\gtrless}{\varkappa}}^{\lim _{n}} \Delta\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)=\prod_{i=1}^{\infty} \prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}
\end{aligned}
$$

We can think of $\Delta\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)($ resp. $\Delta(\mathbf{x} ; \mathbf{y}))$ as an element of $\Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ $\left(\operatorname{resp} . \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right)$.

## Proposition 5.2.

(1) $\Delta\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)$ is $\mathbb{L}$-supersymmetric in the variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$. Therefore $\Delta\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)$ is in $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$. Moreover, $\Delta\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)$ is in $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \hat{\mathbb{Q}}_{\mathbb{L}} \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$.
Furthermore, we have $\Delta\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)$ is in $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{(n)}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\Delta\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)$ is in $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \hat{\otimes}_{\mathbb{L}} \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{(n),+}(\mathbf{y})$.
Proof. (1) By the definition, it is obvious that $\Delta\left(t, \bar{t}, x_{3}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=$ $\Delta\left(0,0, x_{3}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ holds. Moreover, using Lemma 4.5, we see easily that $\Delta\left(t, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)-\Delta\left(0, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)$ is divisible by $t+_{F} t$, and hence the first assertion is proved.
(2) Using (42), we have

$$
\prod_{i=1}^{n} \prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}=\prod_{i=1}^{n}\left(\sum_{\lambda_{i}=0}^{\infty} x_{i}^{\lambda_{i}}{\stackrel{\rightharpoonup}{q_{\lambda}}}_{\mathbb{L}}^{\lambda_{i}}(\mathbf{y})\right)=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} m_{\lambda}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \hat{q}_{[\lambda]}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})
$$

where $m_{\lambda}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ denotes the monomial symmetric polynomial corresponding to a partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$. Using (44), we see that $\widetilde{q}_{[\lambda]}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ can be written as a certain $\mathbb{L}$-linear combination of the monomials of the form $\widehat{p}_{[\mu]}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ with $\mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$. From these, the result follows immediately.
Q.E.D.

Taking limit $n \rightarrow \infty$ and using the Basis Theorem (Corollary 4.21), we can expand $\Delta(\mathbf{x} ; \mathbf{y})$ in terms of a basis $\left\{Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right\}_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}}$ for $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ (resp. a basis $\left\{P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right\}_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}}$ for $\left.\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right)$. Then we will obtain the required functions as the coefficients of these expansions. Thus we make the following definition:

Definition 5.3 (Dual universal Schur $P$ and $Q$-functions). We define $\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ for strict partitions $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$ by the following identities (Cauchy identities) :

$$
\begin{align*}
\Delta(\mathbf{x} ; \mathbf{y}) & =\prod_{i, j \geq 1} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \\
\Delta(\mathbf{x} ; \mathbf{y}) & =\prod_{i, j \geq 1} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \hat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) . \tag{46}
\end{align*}
$$

By the Definition 5.3 and Proposition 5.2 (2), we see that for a strict partition $\lambda$ of length $r$,

$$
\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \in \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{(r)}(\mathbf{y}) \subset \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \quad \text { and } \quad \hat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \in \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{(r),+}(\mathbf{y}) \subset \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y}) .
$$

## Remark 5.4.

(1) By using the Basis Theorem (Theorem 4.20), we can also define $\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\vec{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ for strict partitions $\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$ by the following identities:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Delta\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)=\prod_{i=1}^{n} \prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}} Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \\
& \Delta\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} ; \mathbf{y}\right)=\prod_{i=1}^{n} \prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right) \widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then by the stability property of $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}\right)$ (see Proposition 4.7), we see that the definition of $\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ does not depend on $n$. In particular, in view of (45), we see that $\widehat{p}_{(k)}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\widehat{q}_{(k)}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ corresponding to the one rows $(k)(k=$ $1,2, \ldots)$ agree with $\hat{p}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ and $\widehat{q}_{k}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ defined in $\S 5.1$ respectively.
(2) By using $\Delta(\mathbf{x} ; \mathbf{y})$ and the Basis Theorem (Corollary 4.27), one can formally define the dual universal factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions $\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y} \mid \mathbf{b}), \hat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y} \mid \mathbf{b})$. However, in order to make this definition valid, we have to remove some technical difficulties. We hope to return to this problem elsewhere.
The functions $\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ (resp. $\left.\hat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right)$ are elements of $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \subset \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ (resp. $\left.\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y}) \subset \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right)$, and hence symmetric functions of total degree $|\lambda|$. If we put $a_{i, j}=0$ for all $i, j \geq 1, \widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathrm{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ (resp. $\widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathrm{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ ) reduce to the usual Schur $P$-functions $P_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y})$ (resp. $Q$-functions $Q_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y})$ ). Therefore we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) & =P_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y})+\text { lower order terms in } \mathbf{y} \\
\hat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) & =Q_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y})+\text { lower order terms in } \mathbf{y} \tag{47}
\end{align*}
$$

Here are some examples of these functions (see also Examples 3.2 and 3.6):

## Example 5.5.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \hat{p}_{1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=P_{1}(\mathbf{y}) \\
& \widehat{p}_{2}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=P_{2}(\mathbf{y})-a_{1,1} h_{1}(\mathbf{y}), \\
& \widehat{p}_{3}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=P_{3}(\mathbf{y})+a_{1,1} h_{2}(\mathbf{y})-2 a_{1,1} h_{1}(\mathbf{y})^{2}+\left(a_{1,1}^{2}-a_{1,2}\right) h_{1}(\mathbf{y}) . \\
& \hat{q}_{1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=Q_{1}(\mathbf{y}), \\
& \hat{q}_{2}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=Q_{2}(\mathbf{y})-a_{1,1} h_{1}(\mathbf{y}), \\
& \hat{q}_{3}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=Q_{3}(\mathbf{y})+2 a_{1,1} h_{2}(\mathbf{y})-3 a_{1,1} h_{1}(\mathbf{y})^{2}+a_{1,1}^{2} h_{1}(\mathbf{y}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 5.3. Basis Theorem for $\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{L \mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \hat{q}_{\lambda}^{\text {LI }}(\mathbf{y})$

As expected, the functions $\left\{\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})\right\}_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}}$ (resp. $\left.\left\{\hat{q}_{\lambda}^{L}(\mathbf{y})\right\}_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}}\right)$ constitute an $\mathbb{L}$-basis for $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y})\right)$.

Theorem 5.6 (Basis Theorem).
(1) $\left\{\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right\}_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}}$ are linearly independent over $\mathbb{L}$ and form an $\mathbb{L}$ basis of $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$.
(2) $\left\{\widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right\}_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}}$ are linearly independent over $\mathbb{L}$ and form an $\mathbb{L}$ basis of $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y})$.

Proof. We only prove the assertion (1). (2) can be proved similarly. From (47) and the similar argument as in $\S 4.2$, we see that $\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ 's, $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$, are linearly independent over $\mathbb{L}$. In particular, an $\mathbb{L}$-submodule $\tilde{\Gamma}_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ of $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ generated by $\hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ 's, $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$, is a direct sum: $\tilde{\Gamma}_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=$ $\bigoplus_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}} \mathbb{L} \hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \subset \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$. We wish to show that $\tilde{\Gamma}_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ agrees with $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$, or equivalently, the set $\left\{\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right\}_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}}$ spans $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ over $\mathbb{L}$. To this end, it is sufficient to show that monomials $\hat{p}_{k_{1}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \hat{p}_{k_{2}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \cdots \hat{p}_{k_{r}}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\left(k_{1} \geq\right.$ $\left.1, \ldots, k_{r} \geq 1, r \geq 1\right)$ are expressed as $\mathbb{L}$-linear combinations of $\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ 's, $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$, since $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ is generated by $\widehat{p}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})(k=1,2, \ldots)$ as an $\mathbb{L}$-algebra. We prove this by making use of the Hopf algebra property of $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$. Let $\mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\right)$ and $\mathbf{x}^{\prime}=\left(x_{1}^{\prime}, x_{2}^{\prime}, \ldots\right)$ be two countable sets of variables. Then the function $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}^{\prime}\right)$ can be written in terms of the two sets separately, that is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{\mu, \nu \in \mathcal{S P}} \widehat{c}_{\mu, \nu}^{\lambda} Q_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) Q_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}^{\prime}\right) \quad\left(\hat{c}_{\mu, \nu}^{\lambda} \in \mathbb{L}\right) . \tag{48}
\end{equation*}
$$

This gives the coproduct (comultiplication, diagonal map) $\phi: \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \longrightarrow$ $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$. Note that by the Basis Theorem for $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ 's (Corollary 4.21), the coefficients $\widehat{c}_{\mu, \nu}^{\lambda} \in \mathbb{L}$ are uniquely determined in the above expression. On the other hand, we have by Definition 5.3,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta(\mathbf{x} ; \mathbf{y}) & =\prod_{i, j \geq 1} \frac{1-\bar{x}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}=\sum_{\mu \in \mathcal{S P}} Q_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \widehat{p}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \\
\Delta\left(\mathbf{x}^{\prime} ; \mathbf{y}\right) & =\prod_{i, j \geq 1} \frac{1-\overline{x_{i}^{\prime}} y_{j}}{1-x_{i}^{\prime} y_{j}}=\sum_{\nu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} Q_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}^{\prime}\right) \hat{p}_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Multiplying these two expressions, we have

$$
\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}} Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}^{\prime}\right) \hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\Delta\left(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}^{\prime} ; \mathbf{y}\right)=\sum_{\mu, \nu \in \mathcal{S P}} \widehat{p}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \widehat{p}_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) Q_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) Q_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

By (48), the left-hand side turns into

$$
\sum_{\mu, \nu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}}\left(\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} \widehat{c}_{\mu, \nu}^{\lambda} \widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right) Q_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) Q_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}^{\prime}\right)
$$

and therefore we have the following product formula (we used the Basis Theorem for $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ 's again):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{p}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \widehat{p}_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} \widehat{c}_{\mu, \nu}^{\lambda} \widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) . \tag{49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that by our convention of the grading of $\mathbb{L}=\mathbb{L}_{*}$, the right-hand side is necessarily a finite sum, and hence is contained in an $\mathbb{L}$-submodule $\tilde{\Gamma}_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\bigoplus_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}} \mathbb{L} \hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$. Thus $\tilde{\Gamma}_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ is closed under multiplication. Especially, in the case $\mu=(k)$ and $\nu=(l)$, i.e., one rows, the product $\hat{p}_{k}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \widehat{p}_{l}^{L}(\mathbf{y})$ is contained in $\tilde{\Gamma}_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$. Iterating use of the product formula (49) yields the required result.
Q.E.D.

### 5.4. Hopf algebra structure

As mentioned in $\S 3.1$, the ring of symmetric functions $\Lambda$ has a structure of a self-dual Hopf algebra over $\mathbb{Z}$. Also its subalgebras $\Gamma$ and $\Gamma^{\prime}$ have Hopf algebra structures over $\mathbb{Z}$ which are dual to each other. In this subsection, we shall mention the Hopf algebra structure of our rings $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}), \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})($ see $\S 4.4)$ and $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y})$ (see $\S 5.2$ ). As we saw in the proof of the Basis Theorem (Theorem 5.6), through the Cauchy identity (46), the coproduct formula (48) of $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ determines the product formula (49) of $\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathrm{L}}(\mathbf{y})$ 's. By an analogous argument, one sees easily that the product formula

$$
Q_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) Q_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} c_{\mu, \nu}^{\lambda} Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \quad\left(c_{\mu, \nu}^{\lambda} \in \mathbb{L}\right)
$$

determines the coproduct formula

$$
\widehat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{y}^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{\mu, \nu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} c_{\mu, \nu}^{\lambda} \widehat{p}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \widehat{p}_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{y}^{\prime}\right),
$$

where $\mathbf{y}=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots\right)$ and $\mathbf{y}^{\prime}=\left(y_{1}^{\prime}, y_{2}^{\prime}, \ldots\right)$ are two countable sets of variables. Thus we obtain the following result as a formal consequence of the Cauchy identities (46). Here we write $\phi$ for the coproduct map.

Proposition 5.7 (Duality).
(1) (Duality between $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\left.\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { If } Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) Q_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})=\sum_{\nu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} c_{\lambda, \mu}^{\nu} Q_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \text {, then } \\
& \qquad \phi\left(\hat{p}_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right)=\sum_{\lambda, \mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} c_{\lambda, \mu}^{\nu} \hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \otimes \hat{p}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) . \\
& \text { If } \phi\left(Q_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right)=\sum_{\lambda, \mu \in \mathcal{S P}} \widehat{c}_{\lambda, \mu}^{\nu} Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \otimes Q_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \text {, then } \\
& \quad \hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \hat{p}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\sum_{\nu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} \hat{c}_{\lambda, \mu}^{\nu} \hat{p}_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

(2) (Duality between $\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\left.\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y})\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { If } P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) P_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})=\sum_{\nu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} d_{\lambda, \mu}^{\nu} P_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}), \text { then } \\
& \qquad \phi\left(\widehat{q}_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right)=\sum_{\lambda, \mu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} d_{\lambda, \mu}^{\nu} \widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \otimes \hat{q}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) . \\
& \text { If } \phi\left(P_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})\right)=\sum_{\lambda, \mu \in \mathcal{S P}} \widehat{d}_{\lambda, \mu}^{\nu} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \otimes P_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \text {, then } \\
& \qquad \widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \widehat{q}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\sum_{\nu \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} \widehat{d}_{\lambda, \mu}^{\nu} \widehat{q}_{\nu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the Basis Theorems (Corollary 4.21 and Theorem 5.6), we can define the $\mathbb{L}$-bilinear pairing between the rings $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})$,

$$
[-,-]: \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \times \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \longrightarrow \mathbb{L},
$$

by setting $\left[Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}), \hat{p}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right]=\delta_{\lambda, \mu}$. This pairing induces an $\mathbb{L}$-module homomorphism

$$
\kappa: \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \longrightarrow \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}}\left(\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \mathbb{L}\right), \quad F \longmapsto \kappa(F)=[F,-] .
$$

Using the Basis Theorems (Corollary 4.21 and Theorem 5.6) again, one can show that $\kappa$ is an isomorphism of $\mathbb{L}$-modules. Furthermore, both $\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}}\left(\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \mathbb{L}\right)$ have a Hopf algebra structure over $\mathbb{L}$. Using the above duality (Proposition 5.7), one can also show that $\kappa$ is actually an isomorphism of Hopf algebras over $\mathbb{L}$. As we remarked earlier, we know that $\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \cong \Gamma_{*}^{M U} \cong M U_{*}(\Omega S p)$, and therefore $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}}\left(\Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \mathbb{L}\right) \cong$
$M U^{*}(\Omega S p)$ as Hopf algebras over $\mathbb{L}$. Thus we have the following isomorphism of Hopf algebras over $\mathbb{L}$ :

$$
\Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \cong \Gamma_{M U}^{*} \cong M U^{*}(\Omega S p)
$$

Similarly we define the pairing

$$
[-,-]: \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \times \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y}) \longrightarrow \mathbb{L}
$$

by setting $\left[P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}), \widehat{q}_{\mu}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})\right]=\delta_{\lambda, \mu}$. By means of this pairing and the same argument as above, we have the following isomorphism of Hopf algebras over $\mathbb{L}$ :

$$
\Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \cong \Gamma_{M U}^{\prime *} \cong M U^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)
$$

Summing up the results so far, we have the following:
Theorem 5.8. There is a symmetric function realization as Hopf algebras over $\mathbb{L}_{*}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
M U_{*}(\Omega S p) & \cong \Gamma_{*}^{\prime M U} \cong \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y})=\mathbb{L}\left[\hat{p}_{1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \widehat{p}_{3}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \ldots, \widehat{p}_{2 i-1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \ldots\right] \\
& =\bigoplus_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}} \mathbb{L} \hat{p}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \subset \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \\
M U_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) & \cong \Gamma_{*}^{M U} \cong \Gamma_{\mathbb{L}}^{+}(\mathbf{y}) \\
& =\mathbb{L}\left[\widehat{q}_{1}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}),,_{q}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \ldots, \widehat{q}_{i}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}), \ldots\right] /\left(\widehat{q}^{\mathbb{L}}(T) \widehat{q}^{\mathbb{L}}(\bar{T})=1\right) \\
& =\bigoplus_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} \mathbb{L} \widehat{q}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) \subset \Lambda_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{y}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Dually, there is a symmetric function realization as Hopf algebras over $\mathbb{L}^{*}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
M U^{*}(\Omega S p) & \cong \Gamma_{M U}^{*} \cong \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})=\prod_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} \mathbb{L} Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \subset \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}), \\
M U^{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right) & \cong \Gamma_{M U}^{\prime *} \cong \Gamma^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})=\prod_{\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}} \mathbb{L} P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) \subset \Lambda^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 5.5. Concluding remarks

(1) In $\S 3.3$, we introduced the functions $\tilde{q}_{k}^{M U}(\mathbf{x}) \in \Gamma_{M U}^{*}(k=$ $1,2, \ldots)$, and described the ring $\Gamma_{M U}^{*}$ in terms of these functions. At present, we have not been able to obtain a general formula relating the functions $\tilde{q}_{k}^{M U}(\mathbf{x})(k=1,2, \ldots)$ and $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})(\lambda \in \mathcal{S P})$ under the isomorphism $\Gamma_{M U}^{*} \cong \Gamma_{+}^{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbf{x})$.
(2) By the result of Buch [11], we observe that the stable Grothendieck polynomials $G_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x}), \lambda \in \mathcal{P}$, represent the Schubert classes of the $K$-theory (more precisely, $K$-cohomology) of the infinite Grassmannain $B U \simeq \Omega S U$. Dual functions $g_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y})$, $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}$, called the dual stable Grothendieck polynomials, are defined and studied by Lam-Pylyavskyy [38, §9.1]. By the construction, these dual functions $\left\{g_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y})\right\}$ represent the Schubert classes of the $K$-homology $K_{*}(\Omega S U)$. There is a "type $C$ " analogue of the above story: If we specialize $a_{1,1}=\beta, a_{i, j}=0$ for all $(i, j) \neq(1,1)$ in Definition 5.3, the resulting functions will be denoted by $g p_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y})$ and $g q_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y}), \lambda \in \mathcal{S P}$. By definition, these functions are dual to the $K$-theoretic Schur $P$ - and $Q$ functions $G P_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x})$ and $G Q_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x})$ due to Ikeda-Naruse [25, Definition 2.1]. As shown in that paper, the functions $\left\{G P_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x})\right\}$ and $\left\{G Q_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x})\right\}$ represent the Schubert classes for the $K$-cohomology of infinite maximal isotropic Grassmannians $S p / U \simeq \Omega S p$ and $S O / U \simeq \Omega_{0} S O$ (see Ikeda-Naruse [25, Corollary 8.1]). Therefore the functions $\left\{g p_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y})\right\}$ and $\left\{g q_{\lambda}(\mathbf{y})\right\}$ are expected to represent the Schubert classes for the (non-equivariant) $K$-homology $K_{*}(\Omega S p)$ and $K_{*}\left(\Omega_{0} S O\right)$ of the loop spaces $\Omega S p$ and $\Omega_{0} S O$. We return to this problem elsewhere.

## §6. Appendix

### 6.1. Universal factorial Schur functions

In $\S 4.5$, we defined the universal factorial Schur functions in the $n$-variables $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right), \lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$. In order to consider the limit function as $n \rightarrow \infty$, we need to modify its definition. In fact, we are able to generalize the double Schur function $s_{\lambda}(x \| a)$ and the dual Schur function $\widehat{s}_{\lambda}(y \| a)$ due to Molev [53, §2.1, §3.1] in the universal setting. In this appendix, we only exhibit the definition and basic property of our functions. Details will be discussed elsewhere. Here we use a doubly infinite sequence $\mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}=\left(\ldots, b_{-2}, b_{-1}, b_{0}, b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots\right)$ in place of $\mathbf{b}=\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots\right)$. First we introduce another variant of the ordinary $k$-th power $t^{k}$ (see $\S 4.2$ and Molev [53, p.7]). For a fixed positive integer $n$, we define

$$
\left[t \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right]_{n}^{k}:=\prod_{i=1}^{k}\left(t+_{F} b_{n+1-i}\right)=\left(t+_{F} b_{n}\right)\left(t+_{F} b_{n-1}\right) \cdots\left(t+_{F} b_{n+1-k}\right)
$$

where we set $\left[t \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right]_{n}^{0}:=1$. For a partition $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \ldots, \lambda_{r}\right)$, we set

$$
\left[\mathbf{x} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right]_{n}^{\lambda}:=\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left[x_{i} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right]_{n}^{\lambda_{i}}
$$

Definition 6.1 (Universal factorial Schur functions). For a partition $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \ldots, \lambda_{n}\right) \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, we define

$$
s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)=s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right):=\sum_{w \in S_{n}} w\left[\frac{\left[\mathbf{x} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right]_{n}^{\lambda+\rho_{n-1}}}{\prod_{1 \leq i<j \leq n}\left(x_{i}+_{F} \bar{x}_{j}\right)}\right]
$$

where $\rho_{n-1}=(n-1, n-2, \ldots, 1,0)$.
This is a symmetric formal power series with coefficients in $\mathbb{L}$ in the variables $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ and $b_{n}, b_{n-1}, \ldots, b_{2-\lambda_{1}}$. One sees immediately from the Definitions 4.10 and 6.1 that $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ turns into $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)$ by changing the parameters $b_{i} \rightarrow b_{n-i+1}(i=1,2, \ldots)$, and vice versa.

As with the case of $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ (see Proposition 4.13), the functions $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)$ also satisfy the Vanishing Property. Given a partition $\mu \in$ $\mathcal{P}_{n}$, we introduce the sequence $\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{I-\mu}$ by

$$
\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{I-\mu}:=\left(\bar{b}_{1-\mu_{1}}, \bar{b}_{2-\mu_{2}}, \ldots, \bar{b}_{i-\mu_{i}}, \ldots\right) .
$$

Proposition 6.2 (Vanishing Property). Let $\lambda, \mu \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$. Then we have

$$
s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{I-\mu} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } \mu \not \supset \lambda \\ \prod_{(i, j) \in \lambda}\left(\bar{b}_{i-\lambda_{i}}+{ }_{F} b_{t_{\lambda_{j}-j+1}}\right) & \text { if } \mu=\lambda\end{cases}
$$

Since the functions $\left\{s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)\right\}_{n \geq 1}$ have the stability property under the evaluation map $x_{n}=\bar{b}_{n}$, we can take limit $n \rightarrow \infty$ to obtain the limit function $s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)$.

Using the Cauchy identity and an analogous argument that we did in $\S 5$, we can define the dual functions $\widehat{s}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{y} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)$ for $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$. These functions are a generalization of Molev's dual Schur functions $\widehat{s}_{\lambda}(y \| a)$ in the universal setting. Here we use one more set of variables $\mathbf{y}=$ $\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots\right)$.

Definition 6.3 (Dual universal factorial Schur functions). For a partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, we define $\widehat{s}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{y} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)$ by the following identities (Cauchy identities) :

$$
\prod_{i=1}^{n} \prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1-\bar{b}_{i} y_{j}}{1-x_{i} y_{j}}=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} s_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right) \widehat{s}_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{y} \| \mathbf{b}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)
$$

For a geometric meaning of Molev's double and dual Schur functions, readers are referred to Lam-Shimozono [41].

### 6.2. Root data

6.2.1. Type $A_{\infty}$
$\underline{\text { Weyl group of type } A_{\infty}}$ Let $S_{\infty}:=\lim _{\vec{n}} S_{n}$ be the infinite symmetric group, that is, the Weyl group of type $A_{\infty}: W\left(A_{\infty}\right) \cong S_{\infty}$. An element $w$ of $S_{\infty}$ is identified with a permutation of the set of positive integers $\mathbb{N}:=\{1,2, \ldots\}$ such that $w(i)=i$ for all but a finite number of $i \in \mathbb{N}$. We shall use the one-line notation $w=w(1) w(2) \cdots$ to denote an element $w \in S_{\infty}$. The group $S_{\infty}$ is also a Coxeter group generated by the simple reflections $\left\{s_{i}\right\}_{i \in I}$, where the index set $I=\{1,2, \ldots\}$. More explicitly, the simple reflections are given by the simple transpositions, i.e., $s_{i}=(i i+1)(i \geq 1)$. The defining relations of $\left\{s_{i}\right\}_{i \in I}$ are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
s_{i}^{2} & =1 & & (i \geq 1) \\
s_{i} s_{i+1} s_{i} & =s_{i+1} s_{i} s_{i+1} & & (i \geq 1) \\
s_{i} s_{j} & =s_{j} s_{i} & & (i, j \geq 1,|i-j| \geq 2) .
\end{aligned}
$$

$\underline{\text { Root system of type } A_{\infty}}$ We fix notation about the root system of type $A_{\infty}$. Let $L$ denote a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with a basis $\left\{t_{i}\right\}_{i \geq 1}$. For $j>i \geq 1$, we define the positive root $\alpha_{j, i}$ to be $\alpha_{j, i}:=t_{j}-t_{i}$, and denote the set of all positive roots by $\Delta_{A}^{+}{ }^{10}$, namely

$$
\Delta_{A}^{+}:=\left\{\alpha_{j, i}=t_{j}-t_{i} \mid j>i \geq 1\right\} \subset L
$$

The set of negative roots is defined by $\Delta_{A}^{-}:=-\Delta_{A}^{+}=\left\{-\alpha \mid \alpha \in \Delta_{A}^{+}\right\}$. We also set $\Delta_{A}:=\Delta_{A}^{+} \coprod \Delta_{A}^{-}$and call it the root system of type $A_{\infty}$. The following elements of $\Delta_{A}^{+}$are called the simple roots:

$$
\alpha_{i}:=\alpha_{i+1, i}=t_{i+1}-t_{i} \quad(i \geq 1)
$$

The Weyl group $S_{\infty}$ acts on the lattice $L$ by the usual permutation on $t_{i}$ 's, and hence on the root system $\Delta$. The action of an element $w \in S_{\infty}$ on a root $\alpha \in \Delta$ will be denoted by $w \cdot \alpha$ or $w(\alpha)$ in the sequel. For a positive root $\alpha \in \Delta^{+}$, we have $\alpha=w\left(\alpha_{i}\right)$ for some $i \in I$ and some $w \in S_{\infty}$. Then we set $s_{\alpha}=s_{w\left(\alpha_{i}\right)}=w s_{i} w^{-1}$ (thus for a simple root $\alpha_{i}$ itself, we have $\left.s_{\alpha_{i}}=s_{i}(i \in I)\right)$.

[^9]
## Grassmannian elements

Definition 6.4. An element $w \in S_{\infty}$ is called a Grassmannian element of descent $n$ if the condition

$$
w(1)<w(2)<\cdots<w(n), w(n+1)<w(n+2)<\cdots
$$

is satisfied for some fixed positive integer $n$.
The set of all Grassmannian elements of descent $n$ will be denoted by $S_{\infty}^{(n)}$ in the sequel. Note that $S_{\infty}^{(n)}$ is equal to the set of elements $w \in S_{\infty}$ sucht that $\ell\left(w s_{i}\right)>\ell(w)$ for $i \neq n$, where $\ell(w)$ is the length of $w$. In other words, $S_{\infty}^{(n)}$ is the set of minimal length coset representatives of the quotient group $S_{\infty} /\left(S_{n} \times S_{\infty}\right)$, where $S_{n} \times S_{\infty}$ is a subgroup of $S_{\infty}$ generated by the elements $\left\{s_{i}\right\}_{I \backslash\{n\}}$. It is well known that there is a bijection between the set $\mathcal{P}_{n}$ of partitions of length $\leq n$ and $S_{\infty}^{(n)}$. To be precise, the bijection is given as follows: For $w \in S_{\infty}^{(n)}$, we define a partition $\lambda_{w}=\left(\left(\lambda_{w}\right)_{1},\left(\lambda_{w}\right)_{2}, \ldots,\left(\lambda_{w}\right)_{n}\right) \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$ by

$$
\left(\lambda_{w}\right)_{i}:=w(n+1-i)-(n+1-i)(1 \leq i \leq n)
$$

Conversely, given a partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, we can construct a Grassmannian permutation $w_{\lambda}$ of descent $n$ by the following manner. First note that when considered as a Young diagram, $\lambda$ is contained in the rectangle $n \times(N-n)$ for sufficiently large $N$, and we identify $\lambda$ with a path starting from the south-west corner to the north-east corner of the rectangle. We assign numbers $1,2, \ldots, N$ to each step. For example, for $\lambda=(4,2,1,0)$ with $n=4, N=10$, we have the following picture:


If the assigned numbers of the vertical steps are $i_{1}<i_{2}<\cdots<i_{n}$, and those of the horizontal steps are $j_{1}<j_{2}<\cdots<j_{N-n}$, then the corresponding Grassmannian permutation is

$$
w_{\lambda}=i_{1} i_{2} \ldots i_{n} j_{1} j_{2} \ldots j_{N-n}
$$

More explicity, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
i_{k}=\lambda_{n-k+1}+k(1 \leq k \leq n), \quad j_{k}=n+k-{ }^{t} \lambda_{k}(1 \leq k \leq N-n), \tag{50}
\end{equation*}
$$

where ${ }^{t} \lambda$ is the conjugate of $\lambda$. In the above example, we have $w_{\lambda}=$ 13582467910 . Note that the set $\mathcal{P}_{n}$ (resp. $S_{\infty}^{(n)}$ ) is a partially ordered set given by the containment $\lambda \subset \mu$ of partitions (resp. the Bruhat-Chevalley ordering), and the above bijection preserves these partial orderings.

Furthermore a reduced expression of $w_{\lambda}$ can be obtained by the following manner. For each box (cell) $\alpha=(i, j) \in \lambda$, the content of $\alpha$ is defined to be $c(\alpha):=j-i$. We fill in each box $\alpha=(i, j) \in \lambda$ with the number $n+c(\alpha)=n-i+j$. For the above example $(\lambda=(4,2,1)$, $n=4$ ), the numbering is given by the following picture:

| 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 3 | 4 |  |  |
| 2 |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |

We read the entries of the boxes of the Young diagram of $\lambda$ from right to left starting from the bottom row to the top row and obtain the sequence $i_{1} i_{2} \cdots i_{|\lambda|}$. We then let $s_{i_{1}} s_{i_{2}} \cdots s_{i_{|\lambda|}}$ be the product of the corresponding simple reflections, which gives a reduced expression of $w_{\lambda}$. For the above example, we have

$$
w_{\lambda}=13582467910=s_{2} \cdot s_{4} s_{3} \cdot s_{7} s_{6} s_{5} s_{4}
$$

Action of $S_{\infty}$ on $\mathcal{P}_{n}$ By means of the above bijection $\mathcal{P}_{n} \xrightarrow{\sim}$ $S_{\infty}^{(n)}, \lambda \longmapsto w_{\lambda}$, the group $S_{\infty}$ acts naturally on the set $\mathcal{P}_{n}$. We only describe the action of the simple reflections $s_{i}(i \in I)$ on partitions $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$. Given a partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, a box $\alpha=(i, j) \in \lambda$ (resp. $\alpha=(i, j) \notin \lambda$ and $i \leq n$ ) is removable (resp. addable) if $\lambda \backslash\{\alpha\}$ (resp. $\lambda \cup\{\alpha\}$ ) is again a Young diagram of a partition in $\mathcal{P}_{n}$, i.e., $(i, j+1) \notin \lambda$ and $(i+1, j) \notin \lambda$ (resp. $(i, j-1) \in \lambda$ and $(i-1, j) \in \lambda)$. Furthermore, we fill in each box $\alpha=(i, j) \in \lambda$ with the number $n+c(\alpha)=n+j-i$. Then $\lambda$ is called $k$-removable (resp. $k$-addable) if there is a removable box $\alpha \in \lambda$ (resp. an addable box $\alpha \notin \lambda$ ) such that $c(\alpha)=k-n$. Under the above convention, the action of the simple reflections $s_{i}(i \in I)$ on partitions $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$ is given by the following manner:
(1) $s_{i} \lambda<\lambda$ if and only if $\lambda$ is $i$-removable.
(2) $s_{i} \lambda>\lambda$ if and only if $\lambda$ is $i$-addable.

Otherwise $s_{i}$ acts trivially on $\lambda$. For a general $w \in S_{\infty}$, write $w=$ $s_{i_{1}} s_{i_{2}} \cdots s_{i_{r}}$ as a product of simple reflections, and apply the above process successively to a partition $\lambda$ to obtain the action $w \cdot \lambda$.

Let $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$ be a partition, and $w_{\lambda} \in S_{\infty}^{(n)}$ the corresponding Grassmannian element. Define its inversion set by

$$
\operatorname{Inv}(\lambda):=\left\{\alpha \in \Delta_{A}^{+} \mid s_{\alpha} \lambda<\lambda\right\}=\left\{\alpha \in \Delta_{A}^{+} \mid s_{\alpha} w_{\lambda}<w_{\lambda}\right\}
$$

In view of the above action of $S_{\infty}$ on $\lambda$ (or more directly by considering the condition $s_{\alpha} w_{\lambda}<w_{\lambda}$ ), we can describe the inversion set $\operatorname{Inv}(\lambda)$ explicitly for a given $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$.

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{Inv}(\lambda) & =\left\{t_{\lambda_{i}+n-i+1}-t_{n+j-\lambda^{t} \lambda_{j}} \mid(i, j) \in \lambda\right\} \\
& =\left\{t_{w_{\lambda}(n+1-i)}-t_{w_{\lambda}(n+j)} \mid(i, j) \in \lambda\right\} . \tag{51}
\end{align*}
$$

Euler classes Lastly we define a map $e: L \longrightarrow \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ by setting $e\left(t_{i}\right):=b_{i}(i \geq 1)$ and by the rule $e\left(\alpha+\alpha^{\prime}\right):=e(\alpha)+_{F} e\left(\alpha^{\prime}\right)$ for $\alpha, \alpha^{\prime} \in L$. Note that by definition, we have $e(-\alpha)=\overline{e(\alpha)}$ for $\alpha \in L$. For the simple root $\alpha_{i}=t_{i+1}-t_{i}(i \geq 1)$, we have

$$
e\left(\alpha_{i}\right)=e\left(t_{i+1}-t_{i}\right)=b_{i+1}+_{F} \bar{b}_{i} \quad(i \geq 1)
$$

In particular, for a partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$, it follows from (51) that

$$
\begin{align*}
\prod_{\alpha \in \operatorname{Inv}(\lambda)} e(-\alpha) & =\prod_{(i, j) \in \lambda}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}+n-i+1}+_{F} b_{n+j-{ }^{t} \lambda_{j}}\right) \\
& =\prod_{(i, j) \in \lambda}\left(\bar{b}_{w_{\lambda}(n+1-i)}+_{F} b_{w_{\lambda}(n+j)}\right) . \tag{52}
\end{align*}
$$

6.2.2. Type $B_{\infty}, C_{\infty}, D_{\infty}$

Weyl groups of type $X_{\infty}$ Let $X=B, C$, or $D$, and $W=W\left(X_{\infty}\right)$ be the Weyl group of type $X_{\infty}$. This is a Coxeter group generated by the simple reflections $\left\{s_{i}\right\}_{i \in J}$, where the index set $J=I \sqcup\{0\}=\{0,1,2, \ldots\}$ for $X=B, C$, and $J=I \sqcup\{\hat{1}\}=\{\hat{1}, 1,2, \ldots\}$ for $X=D$. If $W$ is of type $C_{\infty}$ (or $B_{\infty}$ ), the defining relations of $\left\{s_{i}\right\}_{i \in J}$ are give by

$$
\begin{aligned}
s_{i}^{2} & =1 & & (i=0,1,2, \ldots) \\
s_{i} s_{i+1} s_{i} & =s_{i+1} s_{i} s_{i+1} & & (i \geq 1) \\
s_{i} s_{j} & =s_{j} s_{i} & & (i, j \geq 1,|i-j| \geq 2) \\
s_{0} s_{1} s_{0} s_{1} & =s_{1} s_{0} s_{1} s_{0}, & & s_{0} s_{i}=s_{i} s_{0} \quad(i \geq 1)
\end{aligned}
$$

If $W$ is of type $D_{\infty}$, the defining relations are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
s_{i}^{2} & =1 & & (i=\hat{1}, 1,2, \ldots), \\
s_{i} s_{i+1} s_{i} & =s_{i+1} s_{i} s_{i+1} & & (i \geq 1), \\
s_{i} s_{j} & =s_{j} s_{i} & & (i, j \geq 1,|i-j| \geq 2), \\
s_{\hat{1}} s_{2} s_{\hat{1}} & =s_{2} s_{\hat{1}} s_{2}, & & s_{\hat{1}} s_{j}=s_{j} s_{\hat{1}} \quad(j \neq 2) .
\end{aligned}
$$

It is also well known that the Weyl group $W\left(X_{\infty}\right)$ of type $X_{\infty}$ can be realized as a (sub) group of signed or barred permutations. As before, let $\mathbb{N}=\{1,2, \ldots\}$ be the set of positive integers. Denote by $\overline{\mathbb{N}}=\{\overline{1}, \overline{2}, \ldots\}$ a "negative" copy of $\mathbb{N}$ (thus $\overline{\bar{i}}=i$ for $i \in \mathbb{N}$ ). A signed permutation $w$ of $\mathbb{N}$ is defined as a bijection on the set $\mathbb{N} \cup \overline{\mathbb{N}}$ such that $\overline{w(i)}=w(\bar{i})$ for all $i \in \mathbb{N}$ and $w(i)=i$ for all but a finite number of $i$. Denote by $\bar{S}_{\infty}$ the group of all signed permutations. We shall use the one-line notation $w=w(1) w(2) \cdots$ to denote an element $w \in \bar{S}_{\infty}$ (we have only to specify $w(i)$ for $i \in \mathbb{N}$ because of the condition $w(\bar{i})=\overline{w(i)})$. Then the above-mentioned realization is given by the following identifications:

$$
s_{0}=(1 \overline{1}), \quad s_{i}=(i i+1)(\overline{i+1} \bar{i}) \quad \text { for } i \geq 1 .
$$

Then $W\left(B_{\infty}\right)$ and $W\left(C_{\infty}\right)$ can be identified with $\bar{S}_{\infty}$. Further the simple reflection $s_{\hat{1}}$ is identified with $s_{0} s_{1} s_{0}$, in other words, $s_{\hat{1}}=(\overline{2} 1)(\overline{1} 2)$. Then $W\left(D_{\infty}\right)$ can be identified with the subgroup $\bar{S}_{\infty,+}$ of $\bar{S}_{\infty}$ generated by $s_{\hat{1}}$ and $s_{i}(i \geq 1)$.

Root systems of type $X_{\infty}$ Let $L$ denote a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module with a basis $\left\{t_{i}\right\}_{i \geq 1}$. The set of positive roots is defined respectively by

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Type } B_{\infty}: & \Delta_{B}^{+}=\left\{t_{i} \mid i \geq 1\right\} \cup\left\{t_{j} \pm t_{i} \mid j>i \geq 1\right\} \\
\text { Type } C_{\infty}: & \Delta_{C}^{+}=\left\{2 t_{i} \mid i \geq 1\right\} \cup\left\{t_{j} \pm t_{i} \mid j>i \geq 1\right\} \\
\text { Type } D_{\infty}: & \Delta_{D}^{+}=\left\{t_{j} \pm t_{i} \mid j>i \geq 1\right\} .
\end{array}
$$

The set of negative roots is defined by $\Delta_{X}^{-}:=-\Delta_{X}^{+}=\left\{-\alpha \mid \alpha \in \Delta_{X}^{+}\right\}$, and set $\Delta_{X}:=\Delta_{X}^{+} \amalg \Delta_{X}^{-}$. The following elements of $\Delta_{X}^{+}$are the simple roots:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Type } B_{\infty}: & \alpha_{0}=t_{1}, \quad \alpha_{i}=t_{i+1}-t_{i}(i \geq 1) \\
\text { Type } C_{\infty}: & \alpha_{0}=2 t_{1}, \quad \alpha_{i}=t_{i+1}-t_{i}(i \geq 1)  \tag{53}\\
\text { Type } D_{\infty}: & \alpha_{\hat{1}}=t_{1}+t_{2}, \quad \alpha_{i}=t_{i+1}-t_{i}(i \geq 1)
\end{array}
$$

Grassmannian elements We introduce the Grassmannian elements in the case $X=B, C$, or $D$. For simplicity, we only deal with the case $X=B, C$. For $X=D$, we need an appropriate modification (see e.g., Ikeda-Mihalcea-Naruse [24, §3.4], Ikeda-Naruse [25, §4.3]).

Definition 6.5. An element $w \in \bar{S}_{\infty}$ is called a Grassmannian element if the condition

$$
w(1)<w(2)<\cdots<w(i)<\cdots
$$

is satisfied, where the ordering is given by

$$
\cdots<\bar{m}<\cdots<\overline{2}<\overline{1}<1<2<\cdots<m<\cdots .
$$

Let $n$ be a fixed positive integer. We are concerned with a Grassmannian element $w \in \bar{S}_{\infty}$ satisfying the condition

$$
w(1)<w(2)<\cdots<w(r)<1, \quad \overline{1}<w(r+1)<w(r+2)<\cdots
$$

for some $1 \leq r \leq n$. In other words, it is a Grassmannian element in $\bar{S}_{\infty}$ whose first $r$ values $w(1), w(2), \ldots, w(r)(r \leq n)$ are negative. The set of all such Grassmannian elements is denoted by $\bar{S}_{\infty}^{(n)}$ in the sequel. Then there is a bijection between the set $\mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}$ of strict partitions of length $\leq n$ and $\bar{S}_{\infty}^{(n)}$. The bijection is given explicitly as follows: For $w \in \bar{S}_{\infty}^{(n)}$, let $1 \leq r \leq n$ be the number such that $w(1)<\cdots<w(r)<1$ and $\overline{1}<w(r+1)<w(r+2)<\cdots$. Then we define an $r$-tuple of positive integers $\lambda_{w}=\left(\left(\lambda_{w}\right)_{1},\left(\lambda_{w}\right)_{2}, \ldots,\left(\lambda_{w}\right)_{r}\right)$ by $\left(\lambda_{w}\right)_{i}:=\overline{w(i)}$ for $1 \leq i \leq r$. By the above ordering, we see immediately that $\lambda_{w}$ is a strict partition of length $\leq n$, i.e., $\lambda_{w} \in \mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}$. Conversely, for a strict partition $\lambda=$ $\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{r}\right)$ of length $r \leq n$, we define the element $w_{\lambda} \in \bar{S}_{\infty}^{(n)}$ by $w_{\lambda}(i)=$ $\bar{\lambda}_{i}(1 \leq i \leq r)$, and the remaining values $w_{\lambda}(j)(j \geq r+1)$ are given by the increasing sequence of positive integers from $\mathbb{N} \backslash\left\{\lambda_{r}, \lambda_{r-1}, \ldots, \lambda_{1}\right\}$. For example, the Grassmannian element $w=\overline{6} \overline{4} \overline{3} \overline{1} 257 \cdots$ corresponds to the strict partition $\lambda=(6,4,3,1)$. Note that the set $\mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$ (resp. $\left.\bar{S}_{\infty}^{(n)}\right)$ is a partially ordered set given by the containment $\lambda \subset \mu$ of strict partitions (resp. Bruhat-Chevalley ordering), and the above bijection preserves these partial orderings.

Furthermore a reduced expression of $w_{\lambda}$ can be obtained by the following manner. First we associate to each strict partition $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{r}\right)$, $\lambda_{1}>\lambda_{2}>\cdots>\lambda_{r}>0$ the shifted Young diagram

$$
D^{\prime}(\lambda):=\left\{(i, j) \in \mathbb{Z}^{2} \mid 1 \leq i \leq r, i \leq j \leq \lambda_{i}+i-1\right\} .
$$

For example,

is the shifted Young diagram of a strict partition $\lambda=(4,2,1)$. We shall identify a strict partition $\lambda$ with its shifted Young diagram if there is no fear of confusion. For each box $\alpha=(i, j) \in D^{\prime}(\lambda)$, we define its content $c(\alpha) \in I \sqcup\{0\}$ by $c(\alpha):=j-i$ (for $X=B, C)$. We fill in the number $c(\alpha)$ to each box $\alpha \in D^{\prime}(\lambda)$. For example, for $\lambda=(4,2,1)$, the numbering is given by the following picture:


Type $B, C$
We read the entries of the boxes of the shifted Young diagram of $\lambda$ from right to left starting from the bottom row to the top row and obtain the sequence $i_{1} i_{2}, \ldots, i_{|\lambda|}$. We let $s_{i_{1}} s_{i_{2}} \cdots s_{i_{|\lambda|}}$ be the product of the corresponding simple reflections, which gives a reduced expression of $w_{\lambda}$. For the above example, we have

$$
w_{\lambda}=\overline{4} \overline{2} \overline{1} 3 \cdots=s_{0} \cdot s_{1} s_{0} \cdot s_{3} s_{2} s_{1} s_{0}
$$

Action of the Weyl group $W\left(X_{\infty}\right)$ on $\mathcal{S P}_{n} \quad$ By means of the above bijection $\mathcal{S P}{ }_{n} \xrightarrow{\sim} \bar{S}_{\infty}^{(n)}, \lambda \longmapsto w_{\lambda}$, the group $\bar{S}_{\infty}$ acts on the set $\mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}$. We shall describe the action of the simple reflections $s_{i}(i \in I \sqcup\{0\})$ on strict partitions $\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$. Given a strict partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$, a box $\alpha=(i, j) \in \lambda$ (resp. $\alpha=(i, j) \notin \lambda$ and $i \leq n)$ is removable (resp. addable) if $\lambda \backslash\{\alpha\}$ (resp. $\lambda \cup\{\alpha\}$ ) is again a shifted Young diagram of a strict partition in $\mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}$, i.e., $j=\lambda_{i}+i-1$ and $\lambda_{i+1} \leq \lambda_{i}-2$ (resp. $j=\lambda_{i}+i$ and $\lambda_{i} \leq \lambda_{i-1}-2$ ). Furthemore, we fill in each box $\alpha=(i, j) \in \lambda$ with the number $c(\alpha)=j-i$. Then $\lambda$ is called $k$-removable (resp. $k$-addable) if there is a removable box $\alpha \in \lambda$ (resp. an addable box $\alpha \notin \lambda)$ such that $c(\alpha)=k$. Under the above covention, the action
of the simple reflections $s_{i}(i \in I \sqcup\{0\})$ on strict partitions $\lambda \in \mathcal{S P}_{n}$ is given by the following manner:
(1) $s_{i} \lambda<\lambda$ if and only if $\lambda$ is $i$-removable.
(2) $s_{i} \lambda>\lambda$ if and only if $\lambda$ is $i$-addable.

Otherwise $s_{i}$ acts trivially on $\lambda$. For a general $w \in \bar{S}_{\infty}$, write $w=$ $s_{i_{1}} s_{i_{2}} \cdots s_{i_{r}}$ as a product of simple reflections, and apply the above process successively to a strict partition $\lambda$ to obtain the action $w \cdot \lambda$.

Let $\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$ be a strict partition, and $w_{\lambda} \in \bar{S}_{\infty}^{(n)}$ the corresponding Grassmannian element. Define its inversion set by

$$
\operatorname{Inv}_{X}(\lambda)=\left\{\alpha \in \Delta_{X}^{+} \mid s_{\alpha} \lambda<\lambda\right\}=\left\{\alpha \in \Delta_{X}^{+} \mid s_{\alpha} w_{\lambda}<w_{\lambda}\right\}
$$

In view of the above action of $\bar{S}_{\infty}$ on $\lambda$, we can describe the inversion set $\operatorname{Inv}_{X}(\lambda)$ explicitly for a given $\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$. For instance, the set $\operatorname{Inv}_{C}(\lambda)$ for a strict partition $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \ldots, \lambda_{r}\right) \in \mathcal{S P}{ }_{n}, \ell(\lambda)=r$, is described as follows: Let $w_{\lambda} \in \bar{S}_{\infty}^{(n)}$ be the corresponding Grassmannian element. Recall that $w_{\lambda}(i)=\bar{\lambda}_{i}(1 \leq i \leq r)$ and $w_{\lambda}(j)(j \geq r+1)$ are obtained by the increasing sequence of positive integers from $\mathbb{N} \backslash\left\{\lambda_{r}, \lambda_{r-1}, \ldots, \lambda_{1}\right\}$. From this, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{Inv}_{C}(\lambda) & =\left\{t_{\overline{w_{\lambda}(i)}}+t_{\overline{w_{\lambda}(j)}} \mid(i, j) \in \lambda\right\}  \tag{54}\\
& =\left\{t_{\lambda_{i}}+t_{\lambda_{j}}(1 \leq i \leq r, i \leq j \leq r)\right\} \\
& \cup\left\{t_{\lambda_{i}}+t_{\bar{j}}\left(1 \leq i \leq r, 1 \leq j \leq \lambda_{i}-1, j \neq \lambda_{i+1}, \ldots, \lambda_{r}\right)\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

Here $\lambda$ is identified with its associated shifted diagram, and $t_{\bar{i}}$ for $i \in \mathbb{N}$ is understood to be $-t_{i}$.

Euler classes We define a map $e: L \longrightarrow \mathbb{L}[[\mathbf{b}]]$ by setting $e\left(t_{i}\right):=$ $b_{i}(i \geq 1)$ and by the rule $e\left(\alpha+\alpha^{\prime}\right):=e(\alpha)+_{F} e\left(\alpha^{\prime}\right)$ for $\alpha, \alpha^{\prime} \in L$. For the simple roots $\alpha_{i}(i \geq 0)$ and $\alpha_{\hat{1}}$ given in (53), we have

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Type } B_{\infty}: & e\left(\alpha_{0}\right)=b_{1}, \quad e\left(\alpha_{i}\right)=b_{i+1}+_{F} \bar{b}_{i}(i \geq 1), \\
\text { Type } C_{\infty}: & e\left(\alpha_{0}\right)=b_{1}+_{F} b_{1}, \quad e\left(\alpha_{i}\right)=b_{i+1}+_{F} \bar{b}_{i}(i \geq 1), \\
\text { Type } D_{\infty}: & e\left(\alpha_{\hat{1}}\right)=b_{1}+_{F} b_{2}, \quad e\left(\alpha_{i}\right)=b_{i+1}+_{F} \bar{b}_{i}(i \geq 1) .
\end{array}
$$

In particular, for a strict partition $\lambda \in \mathcal{S} \mathcal{P}_{n}$, it follows from (54) that (55)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\prod_{\alpha \in \operatorname{Inv}_{C}(\lambda)} e(-\alpha) & =\prod_{(i, j) \in \lambda}\left(b_{w_{\lambda}(i)}+{ }_{F} b_{w_{\lambda}(j)}\right) \\
& =\prod_{i=1}^{r}\left(\prod_{j=i}^{r}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}}+_{{ }_{F}} \bar{b}_{\lambda_{j}}\right) \cdot \prod_{\substack{1 \leq j \leq \lambda_{i}-1 \\
j \neq \lambda_{p} \text { for } i+1 \leq p \leq r}}\left(\bar{b}_{\lambda_{i}}+{ }_{F} b_{j}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that this value is equal to the specialization $Q_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\overline{\mathbf{b}}_{\lambda} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)$ in Proposition 4.22. Similarly, an analogous result holds for $P_{\lambda}^{\mathbb{L}}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mid \mathbf{b}\right)^{+}$.

## References

[1] J. F. Adams, Stable Homotopy and Generalised Homology, Chicago Lectures in Mathematics (1974), The University of Chicago Press.
[2] A. Baker, On the spaces classifying complex vector bundles with given real dimension, Rocky Mountain J. Math. 16 (1986), 703-716.
[3] A. Baker and B. Richter, Quasisymmetric functions from a topological point of view, Math. Scand. 103 (2008), 208-242.
[4] R. Bott, On torsion in Lie groups, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. 40 (1954), 586-588.
[5] R. Bott, An application of the Morse theory to the topology of Lie-groups, Bull. Soc. Math. France 84 (1956), 251-281.
[6] R. Bott, The space of loops on a Lie group, Michigan Math. J. 5 (1958), 35-61.
[7] R. Bott, The stable homotopy of the classical groups, Ann. of Math. (2) 70 (1959), 313-337.
[8] R. Bott, Lectures on $K(X)$, W. A. Benjamin, Inc., New York-Amsterdam 1969.
[9] P. Bressler and S. Evens, The Schubert calculus, braid relations, and generalized cohomology, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 317 (1990), no. 2, 799-811.
[10] P. Bressler and S. Evens, Schubert calculus in complex cobordism, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 331 (1992), no. 2, 799-813.
[11] A. S. Buch, A Littlewood-Richardson rule for the $K$-theory of Grassmannians, Acta Math., 189 (2002), 37-78.
[12] H. Cartan, Démonstration homologique des théorèmes de périodicité de Bott, I, Séminaire Henri Cartan, 12 no. 2 (1959-1960), Exp. No.16, p.116.
[13] H. Cartan, Démonstration homologique des théorèmes de périodicité de Bott, II. Homologie et cohomologie des groupes classiques et de leurs espaces homogène, Séminaire Henri Cartan, 12 no. 2 (1959-1960), Exp. No.17, p.1-32.
[14] F. Clarke, On the $K$-theory of the loop space on a Lie group, Proc. Camb. Phil. Soc. 76 (1974), 1-20.
[15] F. Clarke, The $K$-theory of $\Omega S p(n)$, Quart. J. Math. Oxford Ser. (2) 32 (1981), 11-22.
[16] F. Clarke, On the homology of $\Omega S p$, J. London Math. Soc. (2) 24 (1981), 346-350.
[17] K. E. Fel'dman, An equivariant analog of the Poincaré-Hopf theorem, J. Math. Sci., 113 (2003), 906-914; Translated from Zap. Nauchn. Sem. POMI, 267 (2001), 303-318.
[18] N. Ganter and A. Ram, Generalized Schubert calculus, J. Ramanujan Math. Soc., 28 A (2013), 149-190.
[19] H. Garland and R. S. Raghunathan, A Bruhat decomposition for the loop space of a compact group: A new approach to results of Bott, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. USA 72 (1975), 4716-4717.
[20] M. Harada, A. Henriques, and T. S. Holm, Computation of generalized equivariant cohomologies of Kac-Moody flag varieties, Adv. Math. 197 (2005), 198-221.
[21] P. N. Hoffman and J. F. Humphreys, Projective representations of the symmetric groups. $Q$-functions and shifted tableaux, Oxford Mathematical Monographs. Oxford Science Publications. The Clarendon Press, Oxford University Press, New York, 1992.
[22] T. Ikeda, Schubert classes in the equivariant cohomology of the Lagrangian Grassmannian, Adv. in Math. 215 (2007), 1-23.
[23] T. Ikeda and H. Naruse, Excited Young diagrams and equivariant Schubert calculus, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 361 (2009), 5193-5221.
[24] T. Ikeda, L. C. Mihalcea, and H. Naruse, Double Schubert polynomials for the classical groups, Adv. in Math. 226 (2011), 840-866.
[25] T. Ikeda and H. Naruse, $K$-theoretic analogues of factorial Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions, Adv. in Math. 243 (2013), 22-66.
[26] V. N. Ivanov, Dimensions of skew-shifted Young diagrams and projective characters of the infinite symmetric group, Zapiski Nauchnykh Seminarov POMI, 240 (1997), 115-135 (J. of Mat. Sci., 96, No. 5 (1999), 3517-3530).
[27] V. N. Ivanov, Interpolation analogs of Schur $Q$-functions, Zapiski Nauchnykh Seminarov POMI, 307 (2004), 99-119 (J. of Math. Sci. 131, No. 2 (2005), 5495-5507).
[28] T. Józefiak, Schur $Q$-functions and cohomology of isotropic Grassmannians, Math. Proc. Camb. Phil. Soc. 109 (1991), 471-478.
[29] A. N. Kirillov and H. Naruse, Construction of double Grothendieck polynomials of classical type using Id-Coxeter algebras, preprint.
[30] A. Knutson and T. Tao, Puzzles and (equivariant) cohomology of Grassmannians, Duke Math. J. 119 (2003), 221-260.
[31] A. Kono and K. Kozima, The space of loops on a symplectic group, Japanese J. Math. 4 (1978), 461-486.
[32] B. Kostant and S. Kumar, $T$-equivariant $K$-theory of generalized flag varieties, J. Differential Geom. 32 (1990), no.2, 549-603.
[33] K. Kozima, The Hopf algebra structure of $K_{*}(\Omega S p(n))$, J. Math. Kyoto Univ. 19 (1979), 315-326.
[34] K. Kozima, The comodule structure of $K_{*}(\Omega S p(n))$, J. Math. Kyoto Univ. 20 (1980), 315-325.
[35] K. Kozima, The Hopf algebra structure of $M U_{*}(\Omega S p(n))$, J. Math. Kyoto Univ. 23 (1983), 225-232.
[36] T. Lam, Schubert polynomials for the affine Grassmannian, J. Amer. Math. Soc. 21, No. 1 (2008), 259-281.
[37] T. Lam, Affine Schubert classes, Schur positivity, and combinatorial Hopf algebras, Bull. London Math. Soc. 43 (2011), 328-334.
[38] T. Lam and P. Pylyavskyy, Combinatorial Hopf algebras and $K$-homology of Grassmannians, Int. Math. Res. Not. IMRN 2007, no.24, rnm 125.
[39] T. Lam, A. Schilling, and M. Shimozono, Schubert polynomials for the affine Grassmannian of the symplectic group, Math. Z. 264 (2010), 765-811.
[40] T. Lam, A. Schilling, and M. Shimozono, $K$-theory Schubert calculus of the affine Grassmannian, Compos. Math. 146 (2010), 811-852.
[41] T. Lam and M. Shimozono, $k$-double Schur functions and equivariant (co)homology of the affine Grassmannian, Math. Ann. 356 (2013), no.4, 1379-1404.
[42] M. Lazard, Sur les groupes de Lie formels à un paramètre, Bull. Soc. Math. France 83 (1955), 251-274.
[43] M. Levine and F. Morel, Algebraic Cobordism, Springer Monographs in Math. 2007.
[44] C. Lenart, Symmetric functions, formal group laws, and Lazard's theorem, Adv. Math. 134 (1998), 219-239.
[45] A. Liulevicius, Arrows, symmetries, and representation rings, J. of Pure and App. Alg. 19 (1980), 259-273.
[46] I. G. Macdonald, Symmetric functions and Hall polynomials, 2nd edition, Oxford Univ. Press, Oxford, 1995.
[47] J. P. May, A Concise Course in Algebraic Topology, Chicago Lectures in Mathematics, The Univ. Chicago Press, Chicago and London, 1999.
[48] J. P. May and K. Ponto, More Concise Algebraic Topology: Localization, completion, and model categories, Chicago Lectures in Mathematics, The Univ. Chicago Press, Chicago and London, 2012.
[49] P. J. McNamara, Factorial Grothendieck polynomials, Electron. J. Combin., 13 (2006), no.1, Research Paper 71.
[50] S. A. Mitchell, A filtration of the loops on $S U(n)$ by Schubert varieties, Math. Z. 193, no. 3 (1986), 347-362.
[51] S. A. Mitchell, The Bott filtration of a loop group, Algebraic topology, Barcelona, 1986, 215-226, Lecture Notes in Math., 1298, Springer, Berlin, 1987.
[52] S. A. Mitchell, Quillen's theorem on buildings and the loops on a symmetric space, Enseign. Math. (2) 34 (1988), no.1-2, 123-166.
[53] A. I. Molev, Comultiplication rules for the double Schur functions and Cauchy identities, Electron. J. Combin. 16 (2009), Research paper 13, 44 pp.
[54] A. I. Molev and B. E. Sagan, A Littlewood-Richardson rule for factorial Schur functions, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 351 (1999), 4429-4443.
[55] P. Pragacz, Algebro-geometric applications of Schur $S$ - and $Q$-polynomials, Topics in invariant theory (Paris, 1989/1990), 130-191, Lecture Notes in Math., 1478, Springer, Berlin, 1991.
[56] D. Peterson, Quantum Cohomology of $G / P$, Lecture Notes at MIT, Spring, 1997.
[57] D. Quillen, On the formal group laws of unoriented and complex cobordism theory, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., 75, No. 6 (1969), 1293-1298.
[58] D. C. Ravenel, Complex cobordism and stable homotopy groups of spheres, 2nd ed. AMS Chelsea Publishing, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, Rhode Island, 2004.
[59] N. Ray, Bordism J-homomorphisms, Illinois J. Math. 18 (1974), 290-309.
[60] R. P. Stanley, Enumerative Combinatorics. Volume 2, Cambridge Studies in Advanced Mathematics 62. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1999.
[61] J. R. Stembridge, Shifted tableaux and the projective representations of symmetric groups, Adv. in Math. 74 (1989), 87-134.
[62] R. Switzer, Algebraic Topology -Homology and Homotopy, Classics in Mathematics, Reprint of the 1975 Edition, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 2002.

Graduate School of Education
Okayama University
Okayama 700-8530
Japan
E-mail address: nakagawa@okayama-u.ac.jp

```
Graduate School of Education
University of Yamanashi
Yamanashi 400-8510
Japan
E-mail address: hnaruse@yamanashi.ac.jp
```


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ In topology, it was known that $H_{*}(\Omega S p)$ is a polynomial algebra generated by elements of degrees $4 i-2(i=1,2, \ldots)$. The problem was to fix algebra generators and to give an explicit description of the coalgebra structure of $H_{*}(\Omega S p)$. (cf. Bott [6, §11]).

[^1]:    ${ }^{2} \mathbb{L}$ is known to be a polynomial algebra over the integers $\mathbb{Z}$ on generators of degrees $2,4,6,8, \ldots$ (see e.g., Adams [1, Part II, Theorem 7.1], Ravenel [58, Theorem A2.1.10]). One can define $\mathbb{L}$ as the quotient of a polynomial ring $P$ generated by formal symbols $a_{i, j}(i, j \geq 1)$ of degree $2(i+j-1)$ by a certain ideal $I$ (see e.g., Adams [1, Part II, Theorem 5.1], Ravenel [58, Theorem A2.1.8]).

[^2]:    ${ }^{3}$ In [27, Definitions 2.10, 2.13], Ivanov introduced a multi-parameter generalization of the usual Schur $P$ - and $Q$-functions denoted by $P_{\lambda ; a}$ and $Q_{\lambda ; a}$, where $\lambda$ is a strict partition and $a=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \geq 1}$ (with $a_{1}=0$ ) is an arbitrary sequence of complex numbers. By definition, $Q_{\lambda ; a}=2^{\ell(\lambda)} P_{\lambda ; a}$, where $\ell(\lambda)$ denotes the length of $\lambda$. In this paper, we use the definition of these functions due to Ikeda-Mihalcea-Naruse [24, §4.2]. They denote these functions by $P_{\lambda}(x \mid a)$ and $Q_{\lambda}(x \mid a)$, where $a=\left(a_{i}\right)_{i \geq 1}$ is an infinite sequence of variables. By definition, $Q_{\lambda}(x \mid a)=2^{\ell(\lambda)} P_{\lambda}(x \mid 0, a)$. Note that $P_{\lambda}(x \mid a)$ is the even limit of the corresponding polynomials $P_{\lambda}^{(n)}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \mid a\right)$ of finite variables because of the mod 2 stability (see Ikeda-Naruse [23, Proposition 8.2]). Also we shall use $[\mathbf{x} \mid \mathbf{b}]^{k}:=\prod_{i=1}^{k}\left(x+b_{i}\right)$ as a generalization of the ordinary $k$-th power in place of $(x \mid a)^{k}:=\prod_{i=1}^{k}\left(x-a_{i}\right)$.

[^3]:    ${ }^{4}$ It might be convenient to use the notation $\bar{X}$ instead of $[-1]_{E}(X)$ in later sections (see $\S 2.5, \S 3.2$ ).

[^4]:    ${ }^{5}$ We adopt the convention due to Bott [8, Theorem 7.1], Levine-Morel [43, Example 1.1.5] so that the $K$-theory first Chern class of a line bundle $L$ (over a space $X$ ) is given by $c_{1}^{K}(L)=\beta^{-1}\left(1-L^{*}\right)$, where $L^{*}$ denotes the dual bundle of $L$. In this convention, the orientation class $x^{K}$ is equal to the $K$-theory first Chern class of the bundle $\eta_{\infty}$, namely $c_{1}^{K}\left(\eta_{\infty}\right)=\beta^{-1}\left(1-\eta_{\infty}^{*}\right)$.

[^5]:    ${ }^{6}$ In the following, when we refer to the coproduct of a certain Hopf algebra, we shall always denote it by $\phi$ if there is no fear of confusion.

[^6]:    ${ }^{7}$ Here and in what follows, we often omit the superscript $E$ for simplicity.

[^7]:    ${ }^{8}$ We put formally $\beta=-1$ in Example 2.1.

[^8]:    ${ }^{9}$ We need to use the completed tensor product $\hat{\otimes}$ because the coefficient ring $M U^{*}=\bigoplus_{i \geq 0} M U^{-2 i}$ is negatively graded.

[^9]:    ${ }^{10}$ In what follows, we often drop the subscript $A$ for brevity when there is no fear of confusion.

